

SINNES OVERTHROW:  
OR,  
A GODLY AND  
LEARNED TREATISE  
OF  
MORTIFICATION:

WHEREIN  
Is excellently handled; First, the generall  
Doctrin of MORTIFICATION:

And then particularly,  
how to Mortifie

FORNICATION.  
VNCLEANNESSE.  
Evill CONCUPISCENCE.  
Inordinate AFFECTION.  
And COVETOUSNESSE.

All being the substance of severall Sermons upon  
COLOS. 3. 5.

*Mortifie therefore your members, &c.*

DELIVERED  
By that late faithfull Preacher, and worthie Instrument  
of Gods glorie, IOHN PRESTON, Doctour in Di-  
vinitie, Chaplin in Ordinarie to his Majestie, Master  
of Smanuell Colledge in Cambridge, and sometimes  
Preacher of Lincolns Inne.

---

*The fourth Edition, corrected.*

---

LONDON,  
Printed by Richard Badger for Andrew Crooke.  
1641.

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO  
LIBRARY

1950

1950

1950

1950

1950

1950

1950

1950

1950

1950





## THE CONTENTS

First, In the Treatise of MORTIFICATION.

### DOCTRINE I.

**T**He height of Glory which wee expect by Christ, should  
cause every man to mortifie sinne page 3.

### DOCT. II.

The frame of our hearts ought to suite with those conditions  
that we receive by our union with Christ. p.4

Explication.

Mortification is a turning of the heart from sin to grace. *ibid.*

Mortification called a turning of the heart, because the  
heart by nature is backward and averse from God. p.5

Sinne seemingly mortified;

1. When the occasion is removed. p.6
2. When it is not violent and raging, but quiet p.7
3. When it is but removed from one sin to another. *ibid.*
4. When the Conscience is affrighted with the judge-  
ments of God. p.8
5. When the strength of nature is spent *ibid.*
6. Being restrained from sinne by good education. p.9

### USE I.

To examine by these rules sinnes Mortification. *ibid.*

Mortified lusts knowne,

1. By a deepe humiliation of the Soule, page 10
2. By the generalitie of it, *ibid.*
3. By the measure of Grace, answering the measure of  
corruption, page 11
4. By the continuance of them. p.12

## The Contents.

### Motives to Mortification :

1. *There is no pleasure in sinne.* p. 13  
*Pleasure in sinne is no true solid pleasure, but a sicke pleasure.* p. 14
2. *The satisfying of lust is an endlesse worke,* ibid.
3. *The great danger of sinne.* p. 15
4. *The deceit of sinne.* p. 16  
*Sinne deceives foure wayes :*
1. *By blinding the understanding.* p. 17
2. *By making large promises.* ibid.
3. *By promising departure at our pleasure.* ibid.
4. *By making a shew of friendship.* p. 18
5. *The rebellion it occasions in us against God,* ib.
6. *The slavery it brings us unto Satan.* p. 19

### VSE II.

*To instruct us that in every regenerate man there is a free-will to doe good.* p. 20

*The power of a regenerate man consists,*

1. *In performing any dutie God commands, according to the proportion of grace he hath received,* p. 21
2. *In resisting any temptation according to the same measure of grace.* ibid.

### OBJECT.

*In the regenerate, the flesh lusteth against the spirit, &c.* ibid.

### ANSW.

*Corruption reignes not, though it may take possession in the heart of a Regenerate man ; it exceeds not the measure of Grace.* ibid.

### VSE III.

*To exhort us to abstaine from the sinne of the heart, as well as sinne in the outward actions.* p. 22

### OBJECT.

## The Contents.

### OBJECT.

*Men shall be judged by their workes, not by the thoughts of their hearts.*

p. 23

### ANSW.

*God will judge the thoughts of the heart, as the cause; the actions, or workes, as the effects.*

ibid.

### VSE IV.

*To teach us that no man is so holy, but he needs mortification.*

24

*The meanes how to come by Mortification, are*

#### I. Outward.

1. *Moderation in lawfull things.*

p. 29

*The danger of excesse in lawfull things.*

ibid.

2. *Vowes and Promises.*

p. 30

*The lawfulnessse of Vowes, and how they are to be esteemed of.*

ibid.

3. *The avoyding of all occasions to sinne.*

p. 31

### OBJECT.

*Professors being strong in faith, need not avoyd occasions of sinne.*

p. 31

### ANSW.

*Opinion of strength in faith is a weaknesse in men, for the more feare, the more strength; besides, habituall grace is but a creature, and therefore not to be relyed on*

p. 32

4. *The lawfull exercise of Fasting and Prayer.*

ibid.

#### II. Inward.

1. *To get a willing heart.*

p. 24

2. *To take paines about it.*

p. 26

*Two errorrs about Mortification:*

1. *That all sinnes have a like proportion of labour to mortifie them.*

p. 27

A

2. T at

## The Contents.

2. That mortification is not a continued worke. p. 28  
*The fruitles pains of Papists in afflicting their bodies, &c. ib.*
3. The assistance of the Spirit. P. 33  
*Meanes to obtaine the Spirit are*
1. To know the Spirit, P. 34
  2. Not to resist, grieve, or quench him. ibid.
- $$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{resist} \\ \text{grieve} \\ \text{quench} \end{array} \right\} \text{the Spirit.} \quad \text{p. 34. 35. 36}$$
3. To use prayer. P. 36
4. To walke in the Spirit P. 37
5. To get a lively faith. P. 38  
*Iustifying faith onely purifieth the heart. ibid.*  
*The holy Ghost not essentially but by a divine power dwelleth in the heart. P. 39*  
*That Mortification goeth before Iustifying Faith, is an error. P. 40*  
*To get spirituall Ioy. ibid.*
7. To get an humblenesse of minde. P. 42

### DOCT. III.

- That all earthly members are to be mortified, P. 43*  
*Members are sinfull, exorbitant affections of the soule, for these reasons : because*
1. they fill up the heart. P. 44
  2. They proceed from the unregenerate part. P. 45
  3. They are weapons of unrighteousnesse. ibid.
  4. They are deare unto the heart, as any member to the body. ibid.
- Inordinate lust meant by earthly members. P. 46*  
*What it is to be earthly-minded. ibid.*  
*By the power of nature a man may conceive of spirituall things, and yet be earthly-minded :*

## The Contents.

1. Not spiritually	ibid.
2. Not from an heart illighted by the Spirit.	P. 47
3. By the knowledge of his understanding.	ibid.
<i>A man may come to know spirituall things, &amp; not be renewed.</i>	
1. By seeing a vertue in heavenly things excellling all other things.	ibid.
2. By beeing of a noble spirit.	ibid.
3. By seeing holinesse in the children of God	P. 48
4. By seeing the attributes of God.	ibid.
5. By feeling the sweetnesse of the promises.	ibid.
6. By believing the resurrection to life.	ibid.
<i>The order of the faculties of the soule.</i>	P. 49
<i>Whether Nature can attaine unto true knowledge.</i>	ibid.
<i>A naturall man may know spirituall things, in their substance, not as a rule of his life.</i>	P. 50
<i>Heavenly mindednesse is the worke of a new life in a man,</i>	ib.
<i>Heavenly-mindednesse admits increase in knowledge,</i>	P. 53
<i>The Vnderstanding the seat of heavenly-mindednesse.</i>	P. 54
<i>An enlightened Vnderstanding communicates it selfe to the rest of the faculties;</i>	
1. By taking away the lets unto good,	P. 55
2. By withstanding the motions of inordinate passions,	ib.
3. By laying open the vilenesse of inordinate affections,	ib.
4. By ruling and guiding them,	P. 56
VSE I.	
<i>To reprove such as favour earthly-mindednesse, or inordinate affections,</i>	ibid.
<i>Reasons against earthly mindednesse, are</i>	
I. In respect of men:	
1. It takes away the excellency of the creature,	P. 57
2. It wounds the soule,	P. 58
A 2	
II. In	

## The Contents.

I I. In respect of God :	
<i>It sets up spiritvall Idolatry in the heart,</i>	p. 59
III. In respect of Professors :	
<i>It is unbecoming them, and makes them like Swine,</i>	p. 60
<i>Great difference betweene the back-sliding of the Saints, and of the wicked,</i>	p. 62
<i>Back-sliding in the Saints is caused,</i>	
1. <i>By hollow heartednesse,</i>	ibid.
2. <i>By evill example of men.</i>	ibid.
3. <i>By removall from under a powerfull ministerie,</i>	p. 63
<i>A threefold caveat to the Saints,</i>	p. 63
<i>Divers Objections of earthly mindednesse answered :</i>	
O B I E C T. 1.	
<i>Earthly things are present.</i>	p. 64
A N S W.	
<i>Heavenly things present, as joy in the holy Ghost, &amp;c. are to be preferred before earthly things,</i>	ibid.
<i>Difference betweene nature and sense,</i>	ibid.
O B I E C T. 2.	
<i>Earthly things are sensibly felt,</i>	p. 65
A N S W.	
<i>Men are deceived, for the greater the facultie, the greater the sense</i>	ibid.
<i>A threefold difference betweene the superiour and inferiour faculties,</i>	ibid.
O B I E C T. 3.	
<i>Earthly things make us to be well thought of</i>	p. 67
A N S W.	
<i>A good opinion must not be regarded in any thing that shall occasion sinne,</i>	p. 68
<i>A remedy against opinion, is a sound knowledge in the word of God,</i>	ibid.

## The Contents.

### O B I E C T. 4

*Earthly things seeme of great worth unto us,* p. 70

#### A N S W.

*They will not do so, if compared to spirituall things,* ibid.

*All mens comforts stand in Gods face,* p. 71

### V S E II.

*To exhort men to leave their earthly-mindednesse,* p. 72

*Motives to mortifie our earthly members :*

1. *The diuell ensnares us by them.* p. 73

2. *They bind us fast from God to the Devill,* p. 74  
*Meanes to obtaine the loathing of earthly things ;*

1. *Sound humiliation,* p. 75

*Three false grounds thereof.* ibid.

2. *The royaltie of spirituall things,* p. 76

3. *A constant and diligent watch over the heart.* ibid.

*Meanes to get heavenly-mindednesse :*

1. *Faith.* p. 77

*A twofold snare of the world,* ibid.

2. *Humilitie,* p. 78

3. *A judgement rightly informed,* p. 79

4. *A sight into the All-sufficiency of God,* p. 80

4. *A remembrance from whence we are fallen.* p. 81

*A comparison betweene a spirituall and a bodily con-*  
*sumption* p. 82

*Motives to heavenly-mindednesse ;*

1. *Heavenly things the best object,* p. 83

2. *No sweetnes in earthly things,* p. 84. 85. *for 2 reasons :*

1. *Because they are mutable,* ibid.

2. *Because they either belong to persons that are*

1. *Good, belonging to God ; and therefore cannot*  
*content them, because they draw their affections*

## The Contents.

. from God.	p. 86
2. Wicked, unto whom they are not sanctified, ib	ib
3. No salvation by earthly things,	p. 88
God will have all the soule, or none.	p. 89
Christ's two markes of a Christian.	p. 90
4. Heavenly things are the better part : proved,	
1. By Scripture.	ibid.
A fourefold difference betweene earthly and hea-	
venly things.	ibid.
2. By reason.	p. 90. 91
5. All things are at Gods disposing.	p. 94
Markes to know whether wee have lost our earthly mindednesse.	
1. By the moderation of our care and delight in earthly things.	p. 96
Signes of the excesse of our delight in them, are	
1. Our immoderate desire of getting & keeping them, ib.	ib.
2. Our excesse in our pleasures and recreations.	ibid.
Recreation when lawfull.	p. 98
2. By the esteeme we have of heavenly things.	ibid.
3. By our spirituall taste, whether wee relish heavenly or earthly things best : as the Word Preached,	p. 100
Eloquence no ornament to the Word Preached.	p. 102
The Word should not be mixed with it.	ibid.
How Learning and Arts are necessary to the Preaching of the Word,	p. 104
Ministers should not endeavour to please the people with Eloquence,	p. 105
4. By our judgement of heavenly things.	p. 206
Spiritual knowledge wrought by the Spirit, able to judge of	
1. Persons.	p. 107
2. Things.	ibid.



## The Contents.

Spirituell renovation is discovered.

- |  |        |
|--|--------|
| 1. By the Affections.                    | p 108  |
| 2. By the Speeches.                      | p.109  |
| 3. By the Actions.                       | p 112  |
| 5. By our brooking the word of reproofe. | p. 113 |

### VSE.

To exhort Spirituall minded men to grow more and more therein.

p. 114

The least finnes to be avoided.

ibid.

Secret finnes to be looked into.

p. 115

Motives to grow in heavenly mindednesse, are

- |  |        |
|--|--------|
| 1. Hereby we are able to doe every good worke. | ibid.  |
| 2. Hereby God is honoured.                     | p. 116 |
| 3. Hereby we may prevaile with God in prayer.  | ibid.  |
| A few faithfull prayers may doe much good.     | 117    |

## OF FORNICATION.

### DOCTRINE I.

ALL uncleannesse is a thing God would have mortified, and quise destroyed out of the hearts that hee would dwell in

p. 119

### DOCT. II.

Fornication is a sinne that must be mortified.

p. 120

The hainousnesse of this sin of Fornication appeares,

I. In the sinfulness of it: For,

1. It is contrary to Gods Spirit.

121

2. It makes a strangenesse betwixt God and us.

ibid.

3. It is a punishment of other finnes.

122

4. It layes waste the Conscience.

p. 123

5. It delights the bodie more than any other sin

ibid.

II. In the punishment of it: For,

1. God

## The Contents.

1. *God himselfe takes the punishment of it into his owne hand.* p. 124
  2. *God reserves filthy persons for an heavy judgement ib.*
  - III. *In the danger of it.* p. 126
  - IV. *In the deceitfulnesse of it.* p. 127
- The deceits of the Divell, whereby he inciteth us to this sinne, are
1. *Hope of repentance, ibid. With considerations against that deceit.* ibid.
  2. *Present impunitie.* p. 131  
*Consideration against it.* 132
  3. *Present sweetnesse in sinne.* 133  
*Considerations against it.* p. 134
  4. *The falsenes of comon opinion and carnall reason.* p. 135
  5. *Hope of secrecie.* p. 136  
*Considerations against it.* p. 137

### VSE I.

*To exhort all men to cleanse themselves from this filthines.* 140

### VSE II.

*To perswade all men to mortifie the inward corruption, as well as to abstaine from the outward action.* p. 143

Trials whether this lust be mortified.

1. *An universall change.* p. 144
2. *An hate and loathing to this sinne.* ibid
3. *A constant keeping our selves from the acting of this sinne.* p. 145

Meanes against Fornication:

1. *For such as have been addicted to this sinne; Let them*
  1. *Get an humble heart.* p. 147
  2. *Labour to bring their hearts to love God, who hath forgiven so great a sinne.* ibid.
  3. *Beware lest Satan beguile them.* p. 148

## The Contents.

2. For them that stll live in sinne; Let them
1. Labour to get an assurance of pardon,
2. Endevor to have a sense and feeling of their sin. *ibid.*
3. To lay hold on the Promises, and apply them. p. 149
4. Use abstinence and fasting. p. 150
5. Resolve against it. p. 151
6. Proportion the remedy to the disease. p. 152
7. Turne their delight to God and heavenly things. *ibid.*
8. Accustome themselves to frequent prayer. p. 153

### Of V N C L E A N N E S S E :

#### DOCTRINE I.

**V**Ncleannesse is one of the sinnes that are here to be mortified. p. 156

The hainousnesse of the sin of uncleannesse, appears.

1. Because it makes the sinner herein, a man of death.
2. Because it is a sinne against Nature.
3. Because it is against ones selfe, as selfe-murder,
4. Because God makes it a punishment of other sins. 157

The deceits of Satan to draw men into this sinne, are

1. Hope of after repentance  
What repentance is. p. 158
2. The deferring of punishment.
3. The common opinion of this sinne. p. 159
4. The privatenesse and secrecie thereof.
5. The present delight they finde in it. p. 161

### Of Evill C O N C U P I S C E N C E .

#### DOCTRINE I.

**E**vill Concupiscence is a sinne to be mortified. p. 162

Reasons thereof are,

B

1. It

## The Contents.

1. It will bring forth actuall finnes	p. 163
2. It defiles a man by hiding sinne in his heart	ibid.
3. It marres all good action.	ibid.
4. It makes Gods cōmandements grievous unto us.	164
The nature of evill Concupiscence what.	p. 165
The sinfulness of evill Concupiscence.	ibid.
The operation of evill Concupiscence in conceiving and bringing forth sine.	p. 166
Evill concupiscēce, both habitual & actual, to be mortified.	168
All sin is to be abstained from, because God forbids.	p. 170
And to mortification are	
1. A serious meditation upen mens courses.	p. 171
2. A suppressing and keeping downe of lust.	p. 172
3. A rectifying of the judgement.	ibid.
VSE I.	
To get free from this sinne.	p. 173
The wrath of God on the creature workes terror in the conscience.	p. 174
Three signes of mortifying this sinne :	
1. A generall reformation in heart and life.	p. 175
2. A right judgemēt of sin, & a true loathing thereof.	176
3. Actuall abstinence from sinne.	p. 177
QUEST.	
Whether a man after true Mortification may fall into the same sinne againe.	ibid.
ANSW.	
He may fall into the act, but not the love of that sinne.	ibid.
Meanes to the mortification of this sinne, are	
1. A labor for an assurance of pardon of our sins.	178
2. Abstinence from all occasion of sinne.	p. 180
3. A delight in grace and holinesse.	p. 181
4. Fervent and heartie praier.	ibid.

## The Contents.

### Of inordinate AFFECTION.

#### DOCTRINE I.

**A**LL immoderat Affections must be mortified. p. 185  
 What Affections are. p. 186

The Appetite double. { Sensuall, } p. 188  
   { Rationall, }

Three sorts of Affections, { Naturall, } p. 189  
   { Carnall, }  
   { Spirituall. }

Affections when inordinate p. 190

Trials of inordinacie of Affections, are

1. To examine them by the Rule : the Rules are  
 1. The object must be good. p. 191

2. The end right.

3. The measure right.

4. The order and season fitting.

2. To examine them by the effects ; The effects are  
 1. The disturbance and hindrance of reason. ibid.

2. An indisposition to holy duties p. 193

3. The production of evill actions. ibid.

4. The drawing us from God. p. 194

What it is to mortifie affections inordinate p. 195

Reasons why they are to be mortified, are

1. They are of greatest efficacie and command in the soule. ib.

2. They make us either good or evill. (196

3. They make way for Satan to take possession of the soule. p.

4. They are the first movers to evill. p. 197

#### VSE I.

To exhort us to take paines in the mortification of these inordinate affections. p. 198

Meanesto mortifie them, are

1. Knowledge of the disease. B 2 p. 200

## The Contents.

<i>Two wayes to discerne inordinate lusts ;</i>	
1. By bringing them to the Touch Stone.	p. 201
2. By considering the stops of them.	ibid.
3. The judgement of others concerning them.	ibid.
The causes of inordinate affection, are	
1. Mis-apprehension.	p. 202
Remedies against mis-apprehension.	
1. To get strong reasons out of Scripture.	p. 203
2. To get a lively faith.	p. 204
3. Experience of the naughtinesse of them.	
4. Example of others.	
2. Weaknesse and impotencie.	p. 206
Remedie against that, is to gather strength.	
3. Lightnesse of the minde,	p. 207
Remedie, to finde out the right object, which is God.	
4. Confusion that riseth in the heart at first rising of the.	209
Remedy timelie prevention.	
	ibid.
5. Corruption of nature.	p. 210
Remedy to get a new nature.	
6. Want of Spirituall watchfulnesse.	p. 212
7. One sinne cause and roote of another.	p. 213
Remedy, to pull up the roote.	
God the onely agent of Mortification.	
VSE II.	
<i>To reprove us for sinnefull affections.</i>	
Motives to conquer inordinate affections.	
1. They are the roote of all evill.	p. 215
2. They wound the soule.	p. 216
3. They breed foolish and hurtfull lusts,	p. 217
4. They hinder the doing of good actions,	p. 218
5. They bring shame and dishonour	ibid.
6. They blinde the reason and judgement,	p. 219

## The Contents.

### OF COVETOUSNESSE

**C**ovetousnesse what.

p. 220

Why it is called Idolatry.

#### DOCT. 1.

To seeke helpe and comfort from riches or any other creature,  
and not from God alone, is vaine and sinfull.

p. 221

#### DOCT. 2.

That Covetousnes, which is Idolatry, is to be mortified, p. 222  
Reasons that God onely can be comfort unto us, and not the  
creature, are

1. God is All sufficient, p. 224
2. The creature is empty and vaine. p. 225
3. We commit the sinne of Idolatry in giving that to the  
creature which is due to God. p. 226

#### VSE 1.

To exhort men to abstaine from lusting after worldly things  
God can give comfort without riches, ibid.  
The creature without the Creator is as the huske without the  
kernell, p. 228

Considerations to dissuade from trusting in the Creature:

1. The creature of it selfe hath no power to comfort, p. 229
  2. The creature reaches not to the inward man. p. 230
  3. A multitude of creatures must goe to the comfort of one  
man, p. 231
  4. The comfort of the creature is but dependant felicitie, ib.
- Whatsoever men leave their children without Gods blessing  
is nothing worth, p. 233  
The deccits whereby men are hindred from mortifying this  
sinne, are

1. They thinke them Gods blessings, p. 234  
Blessings considered without thankefull reference to  
God, cease to be blessings. B 3 We

## The Contents.

*We receive the creatures as blessings :*

1. *When we depend on God for the disposing, continuing, and want of them.* p. 234
2. *When we thinke the same things may be without comfort unto us.* ib d.
3. *When we thinke we may have comfort without them.* p. 235
2. *They apprehend present comfort from the abounding of them.* p. 236

*We may not judge of outward things by sense and feeling, but by faith and a rectified reason.*

*To helpe our judgement therein ; Consider,*

1. *They are but vanities of vanities.* p. 237
2. *What other men, that have bin afflicted, thinke of them.*
3. *What your selves will judge of them at the day of death.*
4. *What you shall finde them for the time to come.*

*Sense of comfort double,* { *A refreshing of the heart by the*  
*proceeding from* { *Creature :*  
{ *An apprehension of Gods favour*  
{ *in those blessings.*

*Joy in the creature may be a*

1. *Remisse joy, as if we joyed not.* p. 239
2. *Loose joy, that may be cast off.* p. 239
3. *Dependant joy, eying the fountaine.* ibid.
3. *They reason falsely.*

*Riches come not all wayes by labour, nor comfort by riches for*  
 1. *God maketh a disproportion betwixt the man and the blessing.* p. 241

2. *God hinders the effects, though the causes concur.*
3. *God denieth successe to the causes* ibid.
4. *They see these things present and certaine, other things doubtfull and incertaine* Earthly



## The Contents.

*Earthly things subject to change, but spirituall things unchangeable.*

*Signes to know whether our love to the creature be right or no : Consider,*

1. *Whether our affection to the creature drawes our hearts from God.* p.243

2. *When earthly and spirituall things come in competition, which we make choice of.*

3. *What our obedience is to God.*

4. *What things trouble us most.* p. 244

*Our affection to riches said to be inordinate, p. 245. when we seeke them.*

1. *By measure more than we should.*

2. *By meanes that we should not.* p.246

3. *For wrong ends.* ibid.

4. *In a wrong manner ; which consists in these particulars : when we seeke them ;*

1. *Out of love to them.*

2. *To trust to them.*

3. *To be puffed up by them.* p.248

4. *To glory in them.*

5. *With too much haste and eagernesse.*

*In the desire of riches there is a double content* p.250

1. *A contentednesse, with a dependance on Gods will.*

2. *A contentednesse, with a submission to Gods will.*

*How farre a man may desire wealth.* p. 251

*A threefold necessity of the creatures*

1. *Of expedience*

2. *Of condition and place.* ibid.

3. *Of refreshment.*

*A desire of riches for superfluitie and excesse, sinfull : for these reasons :* I. Mans

## The Contents.

1. Mans life stands not in abundance of excessse.
2. It proceeds from an evill root. p. 253
3. It may not be prayed for.  
It is dangerous, for it choakes the Word, ibid.
5. We have an expresse commandement against it.  
The end of a mans calling is not to gather riches, but to serve  
God, p. 255
- Riches, the wages, not end of our Calling.
- Rules to direct our care in getting Wealth. p. 257
1. No going into other mens Callings.
2. The end must not be riches, but Gods glory.
3. The care must not be inordinate.  
Signes of inordinate care, are
1. Trouble in the acquiring, ibid.
2. Feare of not attaining. p. 258
3. Griefe in being prevented.
- A man is the covetous whē he strives not against covetousnes  
Covetousnesse spirituall adultery, ibid. aggravated in that
1. It makes men wicked.
2. It does least good. p. 259
3. Riches are but false treasure.
4. They are not our owne.
- Attributs given to riches, are
1. They are many things.
2. They are unnecessary.
3. They will be taken from us.
4. They are not the best.
- Vse 1. To exhort men to mortifie this earthly member Co-  
vetousnesse, p. 260 Meanes thereto, are
1. Prayer to God.
2. Humilitie for sinne.
3. Employment of them to better things. THE



THE  
DOCTRINE  
OF  
MORTIFICATION.

• COLOSSIANS III. V.

*Mortifie therefore your members which are upon the earth, fornication, uncleannesse, inordinate affection, evill concupiscence, and covetousnesse, which is idolatrie.*



His Chapter containeth divers exhortations unto heavenly mindednesse, by which the Apostle labours to dissuade the *Collossians* from corruptible things, unto things not corruptible, but everlasting; not earthly, but heavenly; in the which the life of a Christian, and true holiness standeth.

In the first *verse* he begins with an exhortation to seeke heavenly things; *If yee be risen with Christ, seeke those things that are above*: that is, if you be risen with Christ, and dead unto the fashions of men, then there is an alteration and change in your soules wrought, by  
C which

which you are brought to affect that which is heavenly, and basely to esteeme of earthly things: therefore *If you be risen*; that is, if this heavenly life, and disposition, and change be in you, then let the same appeare by your heavenly-mindednesse; that is, by seeking of heavenly things.

In the second *verse* he joynes another exhortation grounded on the first, to bee wise and to understand them; *Set your affections on things above*: that is, let them bee specially minded of you, let all your faculties bee filled with a knowledge of spirituall things; and this is so joyned with the former, that there can be no seeking without knowing; for how can a man seeke that which he knoweth not? and if thou hast no knowledge of heaven and heavenly things, how canst thou desire them? seeing where there is no desire, there is no seeking: And therefore if thou wouldest seeke heavenly things, as Christ, and Grace, and Salvation, then know them first.

Afterwards in the third *verse* he goeth on, and preseth this exhortation with divers arguments; first, because *You are dead*: that is, seeing you are dead unto earthly things, therefore strive not now to be earthly minded. Secondly, *Your life is hid with Christ*: that is, your happinesse is not seene with the eie of the body by looking on these earthly things, but your happinesse and joy is by Faith beholding Christ, therefore set your heart and eye on him where your life is; that is, you looke for a perfection of glory with Christ, which you cannot have by minding earthly things: therefore be heavenly minded.

In

In the fourth *Verse* the Apostle answereth unto a demand: for they might thus object, You tell us that we shall have a perfection of glory, and that it is hid with Christ, but when shall we have it? that is, when shall it be made manifest unto us? Unto this the Apostle answers, *When Christ, who is our life, shall appeare, then shal we also appeare with him in glory.* And herupon he groundeth another exhortation in the *Verse* I have read: as if he should say, seeing you expect such a perfection of glory to be revealed unto you at Christs second comming, then it stands you upon to set upon your corruptions, to kill, and to slay them that seeke to deprive you of that glory. *Mortifie therefore your earthly members*; that is, slay every foule affection, inordinate desire of earthly things, rid your hearts of them by slaying of them; and although it may seeme a hard work, yet fight still, or else you shall never attaine unto that Life you hope for: So that the first generall point hence, is this;

*That the height of glory, which we expect by Christ, should cause every man to mortifie sin.*

Doct. 1.

This the Apostle makes the ground of our Mortification, *If you be risen with Christ, seek the things that are above, mortifie therefore your earthly members*; that is, except you slay sin, that hath slaine Christ, you cannot get life with Christ: Surely then, Mortification is not as men think it, a needlesse work which matters not much whether it be set upon or no, but this is mens sicknesse; for, as a man that is sick thinks Physicke is not needfull, because he is not sensible of his disease, when as the Physician knowes that it is a matter

of necessity, and that except he purge out that corruption and humour of the body, it will grow incurable: even so, except this corruption of nature be purged out, it will grow incurable, that is, we cannot be saved: therefore we know to mortifie sin is a work of necessity, whereupon standeth every mans life and salvation.

The second thing which we note, is this:

*Doct. 13. That the frame of our hearts ought to suit with those conditions that we receive by our union with Christ.*

And this also the Apostle makes another ground of Mortification; if you be risen with Christ, seek heavenly things, and therefore labour to mortifie your inordinate affections, and sinful lusts, that so the frame of your hearts, and disposition thereof, may suit with heavenly things: As if he should say, You professe your selves to be *risen with Christ*; that is, that you are in a more excellent estate than you were in by nature, and you expect a perfection of glory; then it must needs follow, that the frame of your heart must suit with your conditions; that is, you must be such as you professe your selves to be; and this cannot be, except you mortifie sinne, all inordinate affections, all worldly lust, all immoderate care for earthly things: thinke not to get grace, salvation, and eternall life, except first you slay your corruptions and lusts; for Mortification is a turning of the heart from evill to good, from sin to grace: or, it is a working a new disposition in the heart, turning it quite contrary; Or else it may be said to be the slaying of that evill disposition of nature in us.

Mortification what it is.

Now we must know, that howsoever Mortification

tion is a deadly wound given unto sinne, whereby it is disabled to beare any rule or commanding power in the heart of a regenerate man, yet we say, Mortification is not perfect; that is, it doth not so slay sinne that we have no sinne at all in us, or that we cease to sinne, for in the most regenerate and holiest man that lives, there is still the sap of sinne in his heart. A tree may have withered branches by reason of some deadly wound given unto the roote, and yet there may remaine some sap in the root, which will in time bring forth other branches; so it is with a regenerate man, there may a deadly wound be given unto sinne, which may cause inordinate affections to wither, and yet notwithstanding some sap of sin may remaine, which had need still to be mortified, lest otherwise it bring forth other branches. Mortification is not for a day only, but it must be a continuall work; when thou hast slaine sinne to day, thou must slay it to morrow; for sinne is of a quickning nature, it will revive if it be not deadly wounded, and there is seed in every sin which is of a spreading nature, and will fructifie much; therefore when thou hast given a deadly wound unto some speciall corruption, rest not there, but then set upon the lesser; mortifie the branches of that corruption; and so much the rather; because it will bee an easie worke to overcome the common souldiers, and to put them to flight, when the Generall is slaine.

Wee call mortification a *turning of the heart*; the heart by nature is backward from God; that is, it mindes and affects nothing but that which is contrary to God, it is wholly disposed to earthly things; now

*Simile.*

Mortification why a turning of the heart.



Mortification alters and changes the heart, turning it from earthly to heavenly things; even as a River that is stopt in its usuall course is now turned another way; so Mortification stops the passage of sin in the soule, turning the faculties, the streame of the soule, another way: the soule was earthly disposed, the minde, the will, and affections were wholly carried after earthly things, but now there is a new disposition wrought in the soule, the minde and affections are wholly set upon heavenly things; before, he was for the world how he might satisfie his lusts, but now, his heart is for grace, justification, remission of finnes, and reconciliation. Here then, seeing Mortification is a slaying of sinne, and that many do deceive themselves in the matter of Mortification, who think that sinne is mortified when it is not; and contrariwise others think they have not mortified sin, that is, they have not given a deadly wound unto sin, because they still feele rebellious lusts in their hearts; therefore for the better explaining of this point of Mortification, I will propound two Questions: the first shall be for the discovering of Hypocrites; and the second shall be for the comforting of weak Christians.

*Quest. 1*

The first Question is, Whether sin may not seeme to be mortified when it is not mortified, but onely asleep?

*Answer.*  
When sin  
seemes to  
be mortified,  
and is  
not.

To this I answer, That sin may seem to be mortified when it is not, and that in these particulars.

First, sinne may seem to be mortified when the occasion is removed: As the covetous man may not be so covetous after the world as he was, because he hath

not



not so good an opportunitie, and thereupon hee may grow remisse, and yet the sinne of Covetousnesse is not mortified; for let there be occasion, or an opportunitie offered, and you shall find this sinne as quicke and as lively in him as ever it was before; and so for Drunkenesse, or any other vice in this kinde: when the occasion is removed, the sinne may bee removed, and yet not mortified.

Secondly, sin may be mortified seemingly; when it is not violent, but quiet; that is, when an unruly affection troubles them not, they think that now that sin is mortified; but they are deceived, for it is with sinne, as with a disease; A man that is sicke of a Feaver, so long as he is asleepe he feels no paine, because sleep takes away the sense of it, but when he is awake, then presently hee feels his paine afresh: Even so, when sinne doth awake them out of sleep, then they shall finde it was not mortified, but they only asleepe.

2

*Simile.*

*Sampson, Iudge 16.* so long as he was asleepe in his sin, thought all was well, and that his strength was not gone; but when he awakes out of sleep, his sin awakes, and then with much sorrow hee findes that his sinne was not mortified, especially when he fell into his enemies hands.

Thirdly, sinne may seeme to be mortified when it is but removed from one sinne to another, when it is removed from a lesse to a greater, or from a greater to a lesse. As for example, A man may not be so covetous as hee was, and thinke with himselfe that this his sinne is mortified, when as indeed it is not mortified, but only removed unto another; for now it may be

3

be

be hee is growne ambitious, and seekes after honour, and therefore it stands not now with his reputation and credit to be covetous : hereupon hee may grow bountifull, and neverthelesse his sinne of covetousnesse be unmortified : And so for drunkennesse, and such as desire pleasure, their mindes and delights may bee changed, and the sinne of the soule bee not yet mortified. Sinne is to the soule as diseases are to the body : now we know, that diseases of the body usually remove from one place to another, or at the least grow from a lesse to a greater : so it is with sinne in the soule, it will remove from one faculty to another.

4

Fourthly, sin may seeme to be mortified when the conscience is affrighted with the Judgements of God, either present upon him, or threatned against him : now by the power of restraining grace a man may be kept from sinne; that is, he may so bridle his affections, that he may keepe sinne from the action, he may forsake drunkennesse, covetousnesse, pride and the like, and yet his sinne bee not mortified : for here is the difference betweene a man that hath his sinne mortified, and one that hath not : The first is alway carefull that his sinne come not to action, he is carefull and watchfull over his wayes and heart, as well when the Judgement is removed, as when hee feesles it : but the other hinders not sinne longer than the hand of God is upon him; remove that, and then his care is removed.

5

*Simile.*

Fifthly, sinne may seeme to be removed and mortified when the sap and strength of sinne is dead, that is, when the strength of Nature is spent. As the Lamp goes

goes out when oyle is either not supplied or taken away, and yet the Lampe is still a Lampe, for let oyle be supplied, and fire put unto it, and it will burne; so there may be not the action, and yet sinne is not mortified in the heart: for hee is as well affected to sinne as ever he was, onely the sap and strength of nature is gone: but if oyle were supplied, that is, if strength and nature would but returne, sin would be as quicke and vigorous as ever it was.

Sixthly, good Education; when a man is brought up under good parents, or masters, he may be so kept under, that sinne may seeme to bee mortified, but let those be once at their owne ruling, then it wil appeare that sinne is not mortified in them; that is, that they have not lost their Swinish disposition, only they are kept from fouling of themselves: As a Swine so long as she is kept in a faire meadow cannot foule her selfe, but if you give her liberty to goe whither shee list, she will presently be wallowing in the mire; even so, these are ashamed to defile themselves whilest they are under good Education; but opportunity being offered, it will soone appeare, sinne is not mortified.

The Use of this, briefly, is for Examination unto every one to enter into his owne heart, and examine himselfe by these Rules, whether his sinne be mortified, or no; and accordingly to judge of himselfe.

The second Question is for the comforting of weak Christians: Seeing there is corruption in the heart, how shall I know that the lusts and stirrings of the heart proceed from a wounded Corruption, or else is the Action of an unmortified lust?

6

*Simile.**Use.**Quest. 2*

D

To

*Ans.*  
How to  
know when  
lust is  
mortified.

I

To this I answer, You shall know them by these Rules :

First, you shall know whether the lust in the heart be mortified, and proceed from a wounded heart or no, by the ground of it ; that is, if it proceed from the right root, or arise from a deepe humiliation wrought upon the soule, either by the Law, or by the judgments of God, whereby the Conscience is awakened to see sinne in its owne nature ; and then a raising up of the soule by the apprehension of the love of God in Christ, and out of a love unto God to beginne to mortifie sinne: if the heart in this case doe fight against the Spirit, that is, the lust of the heart, it is because it hath received the deadly wound ; but if it be not out of love unto God that thou mortifiest sinne, if thy heart, in this case, have much rebellion in it, whatsoever thou thinkest of thy selfe, sinne is not mortified in thee : Every thing proceeds from some Cause ; if the Cause be good, the Effect must needs be good likewise : as ( for instance ) if the Tree be good, the fruit must be good ; but if the Tree be evill, the fruit cannot be good : Let every man therefore examine himselfe upon this ground.

2

Secondly, you shall know it by the generality of it : For Mortification is generall ; and as death is unto the members of the body, so is Mortification unto the members of sinne : now you know that the nature of death is to seize upon all the members of the body, it leaves life in none ; so, where true Mortification is, it leaves life in no sinne ; that is, it takes away the commanding power of sinne : For what is the life of sinne,

sinne, but the power of sinne : take away this power, and you take away this life. Therefore it is not sufficient to mortifie one sin, but you must mortifie all sins : to which purpose the holy Apostle here bids them *Mortifie*; when he had exhorted them to the generall of Mortification, then he subjoyne divers particulars, as, Fornication, Vncleannesse; of which hereafter, (God assisting) you shall heare. Hence then you learne, it will not be sufficient for you to leave your covetousnesse, but you must leave your pride, your vaine glory : So also when thou hast slaine sinne in thy understanding, thou must mortifie it in thy will and affections; slay sinne first in thy soule, and then slay it in the parts of thy body; and so examine your selves whether you finde this worke of Mortification to be generall.

Thirdly, you shall know whether your lust be mortified by this, Looke if there be an equality betweene the life of Grace, and the death of corruption : that is, if you find grace in measure answerable unto the measure of corruption which is mortified in thee, it is a signe thy sinne is mortified : for as there is a dying unto sinne, so there will be a quickening unto holinesse: seeing the new man will beginne to revive, when the old man beginnes to dye; Grace will grow strong, when Corruption grows weake: and therefore the Apostle saith, *Grow in Grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord Iesus Christ, 2 Pet. 3. 18.* As if he should say, you shall find by this whether the corruption of nature be slaine in you, if you *stand fast*, (as in the former Verse) which you cannot do unles grace grow, except there

bee a porportion betwixt the life of Grace, and the death of corruption: Therefore examine your selves by this, whether you doe finde that you are quickened in Grace, to pray, or heare, which is an excellent signe that sinne is mortified.

*Simile.*

Fourthly, you shall know whether your lusts are mortified by the continuance of them: For if sinne be mortified, and have received her deadly wound, it will bee but for the present, it will not continue; it may well rage and trouble thee for a time, but it is only now and then by fits, whereas an unmortified lust ever rageth. It is with sinne in this case, as it is with a man that hath received his deadly wound from his enemy, hee will not presently flye away, but will rather runne more violently upon him that hath wounded him; yet let him bee never so violent, in the middle of the action he sinkes downe; when he thinks to doe the most harme, then hee is the most unable, because he hath received his deadly wound, whereby he hath lost the strength and power of nature, which otherwise might have prevailed: so it will bee with sinne, and with a mortified lust, it may rage in the heart, and seeme to beare sway and rule over thee as Lord, but the power and strength of sinne is mortified, and sinkes downe, wanting ability to prevaile: and why? because it hath received its deadly wound: Indeede the most honest man, and the most sanctified that is, may have lust in his heart, and his lust may many times for the present be violent: yet though it rage, it cannot rule, it may strive, but it cannot prevaile: therefore you may try

vour

your selves by this, whether the corruptions and stirrings of your hearts proceed from a mortified lust, or no.

Now seeing Mortification is so hard a worke, and yet a worke that of necessity must be done: Men also be so hardly drawne to mortifie their lusts, which they account as a part of themselves, not to be parted withall, for nature her selfe hath implanted this principle in them, Every man ought to love himselfe, what then should move any man to mortifie his lusts? Therefore for the better perswading of men unto this worke, we will lay down some motives to move every man to mortifie his corruptions.

Five Motives to Mortification.

I  
Motive.

The first motive to move all men to mortifie sin, is, because *there is no pleasure in sinne*: Sinne cannot content the soule; for this is the nature of sinne, the further a man goes on in sinne, the further he goes on in sorrow, for in every degree of sin there is a degree of sorrow: As on the contrary, unto every degree of grace, there is a degree of joy: I say, the more thou gettest of grace and holinesse, of Faith and Regeneration, the more peace of Conscience and spirituall joy thou gettest: for, grace, as naturally produceth joy, as sinne sorrow. Now if men did but consider this, that is, if they had any spirituall understanding to know that degrees of sinne did bring degrees of sorrow, they would not so run unto sinne as they doe.

But they will object unto me, You are deceived, for there is pleasure in sinne: we have found pleasure in sinne, and what will you perswade us against our knowledge? Have we not reason to distinguish be-

Object.



twixt things which we know are of a contrary nature: Will you perswade men that honey is not sweete, who have tasted of it? If you should bring a thousand arguments, they will not prevaile: even so we have felt sweetnesse in sinne, therefore we cannot be perswaded to the contrary.

*Answer*

*Simile.*

To this I answer, That the pleasure that is in sinne, (if there be any pleasure) is no true solid pleasure, but a sicke pleasure; such a pleasure as a man that is sicke of a Feaver hath, a pleasure to drinke; not because he hath a love to drinke excessively, but because it is pleasing to his disease: even so, when men finde pleasure in sinne, it is not because it is true pleasure, but because it suits with their disease; that is, with their sinne. Now that this is no true pleasure, appeares, because that which gives true content unto the soule is Grace, which ever is accompanied with Faith in Christ; and this works that peace in the soule *which passeth all understanding*, Phil. 4. 7. whereas sinne makes not peace, but warre in the soule; and where there is warre in the soule, that is, where the faculties of the soule are in a combustion amongst themselves, there can be no pleasure. A man that is sicke of a dropisie may have pleasure to drinke, but his pleasure depends upon his disease; if the disease were removed, the pleasure would cease.

<sup>2</sup>  
*Motive.*

The second Motive, is, Because *when men goe about to satisfie their lusts, they go about an endlesse worke*: Now men in outward things would not set themselves about a work, if they did but know before that it would be endlesse; that is, that they could never finish it; for



for every one loves to goe about things of a finit nature, which may be accomplished : even so, if men did but know the nature of sinne, they would not give themselves to satisfie their lusts, because they goe about a worke that is endlesse : for the nature of sinne is like the Horseleech which the Wise-man speakes of, *Prov. 30. 15.* that the more it is given, the more it craves, but is never satisfied ; so the more you seeke to satisfie sin, the more it desires : like the fire, the more you cast into it, the more it burnes : but if you will quench it, then detract from it : so, if thou wouldest have sin to dye, then detract from thy pleasure, from thy covetousnesse, from thy pride. A man that is sicke of a Feaver, if you would not increase his heate, then keepe him from cold drinke, and other things that are contrary to it : but if you doe satisfie the disease in these things, you doe increase it : so, if you would not goe about an endlesse work, give your lusts a peremptory deniall, please not sinne : for if you doe, you will displease God : let this therefore move men to mortifie their lusts.

The third Motive to move all men to mortifie sin, is, because of *the great danger it brings a man unto* ; it makes a man liable unto all the judgements of God, it takes Gods speciall protection from a man, it fills the heart full of slavish feare ; it is like a quagmire which may seeme to be firme and solid, but being once in it, the more you strive to get out, the greater danger you are in : Like a bird that is taken with a gin, the more shee seekes to escape, the faster shee is holden by it : so it is with sinne, it carrieth a faire shew, it will pretend

3  
Motive

Simile.

tend much good, but take heed of falling into it, for if you be once in it, it will be a hard matter to escape. The Understanding is the Porter of the soule, so long as there is spirituall life in the soule, the rest of the faculties doe partake of it, and so the whole is preserved; now sinne blinds the understanding, and when the understanding is mis-informed, it mis-informs the will and affections; that is, it breeds a disorder in the soule: and when once there is a disorder in the soule, and among the faculties, then the meanes of grace becomes unprofitable: To this effect the Apostle saith, They became *blinde in their understanding*, and then they fell into noysome lusts, giving themselves unto a customary sinning, they became blinde in their understandings; that is, it put out their eyes, it made them blinde as beetles; and when a man is blinde, he will run upon any danger, because he sees it not: even so, when sinne hath put out the eye of the minde, the soule is in marvellous great danger of falling irrecoverably: therefore let this move men to mortifie sinne.

4  
Motive.

The fourth Motive to move all men to mortifie sinne, is, Because *sinne will deceive men*: Now there is no man that would willingly be couzened, every man would be plainely dealt withall; therefore if men did but know this, that if they gave way unto their lusts, they would befoole them, surely men would not be so easily led away by them. But men will not beleeve this, they cannot conceive how there should be such deceit in sinne, seeing they are of so neere a conjunction, as to be a part of themselves: and therefore I will shew

shew you how sinne doth couzen them, and that in these particulars :

First, it makes a man a foole, by blinding the understanding : and when he is thus blinded, he is led away to the committing of every sinne : and therefore it is said, 1 Pet. 1. 14. *Not fashioning your selves according to the former lusts in your ignorance* ; that is, before you were inlightned, your lusts had made you fooles by taking away your understandings, and putting out the eye of your mindes, but now fashion not your selves, suffer not sinne to blinde you againe, seeing you now see.

Secondly, it doth cozen you by making large promises : if thou wilt bee a wanton person, it will promise thee much pleasure ; if ambitious, much honour, if covetous, much riches : nay, if thou wilt be secure, carelesse, and remisse for spirituall things, as grace, and justification, and remission of finnes, it will make thee as large a proffer as the divell sometime made unto Christ. *Matth. 4. 4. All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall downe and worship me.* So, it may be he will promise thee salvation and life everlasting, but he will deceive thee, for it is none of his to bestow ; if he give thee any thing, it shall be that which he promised not, and that is, in the end, horror of conscience and destruction.

Thirdly, by promising to depart whensoever thou wilt have it : Oh, saith sinne, but give me entertainment for this once, bee but a little covetous, a little proud or ambitious and I will depart whensoever thou wilt have me : But give way unto sin in this case,

E

and

How sinne  
cozens.

I

1 Pet. 1. 14

2

Mat. 4. 4.

3

Heb. 3. 23.

and thou shalt find it will deceive thee; for sin hardens the heart; duls the senses, and makes dead the conscience, so that now it will not be an easie matter to dispossesse sin when it hath taken possession of the soule. It is not good to let a theefe enter into the house upon such conditions, therefore the Apostle saith, *Heb. 3. 23. Take heed lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulnesse of sinne*; that is, sin will promise you this and that, but believe it not, it will deceive you.

Fourthly, in the end when wee thinke it should be our friend, it will be our greatest enemy: for instead of life, it will give us death; it will witnesse against us, that we are worthy of death, because we have neglected the meanes of grace, neglected to heare, to pray, and to confer; and what was the cause of this remission but sinne, and yet it accuseth us of what it selfe was the cause. Now what greater enemy can a man possibly have than hee that shall provoke him to a wicked fact, and then after accuse him for it: therefore let this move men to mortifie their lusts.

Motive.

Rom. 6. 19

The fifth Motive to move all men to hate sinne, is, *Because it makes us Rebels against God*; and who would bee a Rebelle, and Traytour against God and Christ, who was the cause of his being? The Apostle saith, *Being servants unto sinne, we become servants of unrighteousnesse, Rom. 6. 19.* that is, if we suffer sin to reigne in us, then we become servants of unrighteousnesse, Rebels unto God, and enemies unto Christ, who love righteousness: now he that is a friend unto God, loves that which God loves, and hates that which God hates; but he that is not, loves the contrary

trary, for unrighteousnesse is contrary to God, and he that loves it, is a rebell against God: Every lust hath the seed of rebellion in it, and as it increaseth, so rebellion increaseth: therefore let this move men to mortifie sin.

The sixth Motive to move men to mortifie sinne, is, Because *sin will make us slaves to Satan*: The Apostle saith, That to whomsoever you yeeld your selves servants to obey, his servants you are to whom you obey, *Rom. 6.16.* that is, if you do not mortifie your lusts, you will be slaves to your lusts, they will beare rule over you; and miserable will be your captivity under such a treacherous lord as sin is: therefore if you would have Christ to be your Lord and Master, if you would be free from the slavery of Satan, then fall a slaying of your lusts, otherwise you cannot be the servants of God: let this move men also to mortifie sin.

Motive.

Rom. 6.16

Now to make some use of it to our selves: The first confectary or use stands thus; Seeing the Apostle saith, *If you be risen with Christ, then mortifie your earthly members*, therefore mortification is a signe whereby you may trie your selves whether you belong unto God or no: if you be risen with Christ, that is, if the life of grace be in you, it will not be idle, but it will be employed in the slaying of sin. Now if mortification be not in you, you can then claime no interest in Christ, or in his promises; for he that finds not mortification wrought in him, he hath neither interest unto Christ, nor to any thing that appertaines unto Christ: and seeing this is so, let us be taught by it, that every one should enter into examination of his owne

Vse 1.

heart, to finde out the truth of this grace of Mortification, especially before he come unto the Sacrament; for if we finde not Mortification wrought in us, we have no right to partake of the outward signes.

Use 2.

The second Use or Confectary, is, That seeing the Apostle saith, *Mortifie*; hereby ascribing some power unto the *Colossians* to mortifie their Corruptions; as if he should say, You professe your selves to be risen with Christ, then let that life which you have received, slay your corruptions. Hence we note, that there was and is in every regenerate man, a certaine free will to do good. Now when we speake of free will, I doe not mean that Free-will which is in controversie now adayes, as though there were such a thing inherent in us; but this which I speake of, is that freedome of will that is wrought in us after Regeneration; that is, when a man is once begotten againe, there is a new life and power put into him, whereby he is able to do more than he could possibly do by nature: and therefore the Apostle saith unto *Timothy*, *Stirre up the grace that is in thee*, 2 *Tim.* 1. 6. that is, thou hast given thee the gift of instruction, the life of grace is in thee, therefore stirre it up, set it on worke, use the power of grace to doe good: which shewes that there is a certaine power in the regenerate man to doe good: for although by nature we are dead, yet grace puts life into us; As it is with fire, if there be but a sparke, by blowing, in time it will come to a flame; so where there is but a spark of the fire of grace in the heart, the spirit doth so accompanie it, that in time it is quickened up unto every Christian duty.

2 Tim. 1. 6

Simile.

But

But you will say unto me, Wherein is the Regenerate man able to do more than another man, or more than he could doe?

Object.

To this I answer, that the Regenerate man is able to doe more than he could doe, in these two Particulars:

Ans. 1.

First, he is able to perform any duty; or any thing God commands, according to the proportion of Grace that he hath received; but if the duty or thing exceed the Grace that he hath received, then he is to pray for an extraordinary help of the Spirit: but he could not doe this before, neither is it in the power of an unregenerate man to doe it.

I  
The power of a Regenerate man.

Secondly, he is able to resist any temptation or sin, if it be not greater, or above the measure of grace that he hath received; if it be a temptation of distrust, or impatency, or presumption, if it exceed not the measure of Grace that he hath received, he is able to put it to flight; but if it doe exceed, then he is to pray for an extraordinary helpe of the Spirit: now the unregenerate man hath no power to resist sin or temptation in this case.

2

But you will say again, that there is no such power in the regenerate man, for the Apostle saith, Gal. 5. 17. *The flesh lusteth against the spirit, and the spirit against the flesh, and these are contrary one to the other, so that you cannot doe the things that you would.*

Object. 2  
Gal. 5. 17.

To this I answer; It is true, that in the most sanctified man that is, there is corruption, and this corruption will fight against the spirit, and may sometimes hinder good; but it is then when it exceeds the mea-

Ans. 2



sure of Grace he hath received, neither is it alway prevailing in this kinde, for when it exceeds not the grace, the spirit overcomes it: neither doth it alwayes continue; it may be in the heart, but it cannot reigne in the heart; it may be in the heart, as a Theefe in a house, not to have residence and a dwelling place, but for a night and be gone; so this lust in the heart of a Regenerate man dwels not there; that is, it doth not alwayes hinder him from good, but for a time, and then departs: but it is not thus with an unregenerate man, sinne takes possession and keepes possession of his heart.

Use 3.

It is not enough to abstaine from sin in the action, but it must be in the heart.

The third consecratory or use stands thus; seeing the Apostle saith, *Mortifie*; that is, do not onely abstaine from the outward actions of sin, but from the thought of the heart; for mortification is a slaying of the evill disposition of the heart, as well as the slaying of the actions of the body; mortification is first inward, and then outward: Hence we gather this point, That it is not sufficient for a man to abstaine from the actions of sinne, but he must abstaine from sinne in his heart, if he would prove his mortification to be true: 2 Pet. 2. 14. the Apostle saith, that their *Eyes were full of adultery*: Now lust is not in the eye, but in the heart: but by this he shewes, that it is the fulnesse of sinne in the heart, that fills the eyes; therefore looke unto the heart, for the actions are but the branches, but the root is in the heart; that is, whatsoever evill action is in the hand, it hath its first breeding in the heart; if therefore you would remove the Effect, you must first remove the Cause: now the Cause if it bring forth



forth an evill Effect, is the greater evill ; as the Cause of good is greater than the Effect it produceth : even so the sin of the heart, because it is the Cause of evill actions, is greater than the evill that it produceth. Then thinke not with your selves, that if you abstaine from the out ward grosse actions of sin, that sin is mortified in you; but go first unto the Cause and see whether that evill disposition of the heart be mortified, whether there bee wrought in you a new disposition to good, and a withering of all inordinate affections.

But you will say unto me, Our Saviour saith, that *Every man shall be judged by his workes* : and the Apostle saith, that *Every man shall receive according to the workes done in the body* : by which it appeares, that a man shall not be judged by the thoughts of his heart, but by his actions.

*Object.*

To this I answer ; It is true, that men shall bee judged by their workes, because actions declare either that good that is in the heart, or the evill that is in the heart; so that he will judge the heart first as the cause, and then the actions as the effects. *Rom. 8. 27.* it is said, *He that searcheth the heart, knoweth the mind of the spirit* : so it is as true, that hee knowes the mind of the flesh ; that is, the actions of the unregenerate part. Now as the sap is greater in the roote than in the branches, so the greater sinne is in the heart, and therefore it shall receive greater punishment. Therefore if the root be not purged, notwithstanding thou abstaine from the outward actions, thou hast not as yet mortified sinne, because thy heart is impure ; and seeing God will judge us by our hearts, if we have any care of our sal-

*Answ.*

vati-

Use 4.

No man  
so holy  
but needs  
Mortifica-  
tion.

Meanes  
how to  
come to  
Mortifica-  
tion.

Meanes to  
get a wil-  
ling heart.

vation, let us labour to cut off the buds of sinne that spring from the heart.

The fourth Confectary, or Use, stands thus; seeing the Apostle exhorts the *Colossians* to mortifie their lusts, who had set upon this worke already: hence we note this point, That no man is so holy or sanctified, but he had need still to be exhorted to Mortification: For howsoever it be true, that in the regenerate, sinne hath received a deadly wound, yet it is not so killed but there is still sap in the root, from whence springs many branches; and therefore had need of continuall Mortification, because the flesh will still lust against the spirit; and although there is such corruption in them, yet are they not under the power of it, neither doth it beare rule in them: let them therefore that have not set upon this worke of Mortification, now beginne to mortifie their lust; and let all those that have already begunne, continue in this worke. Thus much for the Uses.

But you will say unto me, How shall we attaine this work of Mortification? and therefore here will I lay downe some meanes how a man may come to this work of Mortification.

The first meanes is to endeavour to get a willing heart to have your sinnes mortified; that is, a holy dislike, and a holy loathing of them, with a desire of the contrary grace: if men did but see what an excellent estate Regeneration is, it would breed in them a holy desire of Mortification; therefore our Saviour saith, when his Disciples came to him, and complained of the weaknesse of their faith, *Mat. 17. If ye have Faith*

*Faith as a graine of Mustard-seed, ye shall say unto this mountaine, Remove, and it shall be removed.* By setting forth the excellency of Faith, he take paines to work in them a desire of it; even so, if a man once can get a desire but to have his sin mortified, he will presently have it; for Christ hath promised it, *Mat. 5. 9. Blessed are they that hunger and thirst after righteousness, for they shall be satisfied;* that is, they which hunger in generall for any part of righteousness, they shall be filled: therefore, if we can come but to hunger, especially for Mortification, which is the principall part of righteousness; I say, if we can come but unto God in truth with a willing heart, and desire it, we shall be sure, to have it: for besides his promise, we have him inviting of us to this work, *Matth. 11. 28. Come unto me all ye that are weary and heavy laden, and I will ease you:* Now what will he ease them of, the guilt? no, (though it be not excluded) but principally of the commanding power of sinne; that he may not onely be free from the guilt of sinne, but from the power of sinne, that he may have his sin mortified and subdued. Now what else is the reason that men have not their sinnes mortified, and that there is such a complaint of unmortified lusts and affections, but because they come not with a willing heart: their hearts are unstable, they are willing and unwilling; willing to leave sin, that they may be freed from the guilt: unwilling to leave the pleasure they have in sin: therefore, saith one, I prayed often to have my sinnes forgiven, and mortified, and yet I feared the Lord would heare my prayers: so it is with many in this case, they pray for

*August.*

F

Morti-

Mortification, but it is but verball, it comes not from the heart; that is, from a willing mind: therefore if thou wouldest have thy sin mortified; labour to get a willing heart.

2  
Meanes, to  
take pains  
about it.

The second meanes, if you would have your finnes mortified, is this, You must take paines; Mortification is painfull and laborious, and yet pleasant withall; it will not be done by idlenesse, a slothfull man will never mortifie sinne, for indeed it is a worke that desires labour: every thing that is of great worth, if it may be attained by industry, deserves labour; that is, the excellency of it challengeth it of men: even so, the excellencie and preciounesse of this worke of mortification, because it is a thing of much worth, deserves labour at our hands: The knowledge of every art requireth labour and industry, and the greater mystery that is infolded in the Science, the greater labour it requireth: even so, Mortification requireth much paines, for it discovereth unto us a great mystery, the mystrie of sinne, and the baseness of our nature, and also the excellencies that are in Christ, both of justification and remission of finnes. And this necessarily flowes from the former; for if there be a willing mind in a man to mortifie sinne, then certainly he will take any paines that he may attaine unto it, as the Apostle saith, 1 Cor. 9. 26. *I runne not in vaine as one that beats the aire*: that is, I take paines, but it is not in vaine; I take no more pains than I must needs, for if I did take lesse, I could not come unto that I am at. The lesse labour that any man takes in the mortification of sinne, the more will sinne encrease; and the more it increaseth,

*Simile.*

seth, the more work it maketh a man have to mortifie it: therefore it stands men upon to take paines with their corruptions in time, that so they may prevent greater labour: and this meets with the errors of certaine men.

First, those that thinke that all finnes have the like proportion of labour in mortifying; they thinke that a man may take no more paines for the mortifying of one sinne, than another; but these men are deceived, for all sins are not alike in a man, but some are more, some are lesse violent; and accordingly, mortification must be answerable unto the sinne. It is with mortification in this case, as it is with physicke in diseases; all diseases require not the same physicke, for some diseases must be purged with bitter pils, others not with the like sharpnesse: againe, some physicke is for weakening, others for restoring the strength: even so there are some sins, like the divell which our Saviour speaks of, that cannot be *cast out but by fasting and prayer*: that is, they cannot bee mortified without much paines; for if it be a heart-sinne, that is, a sinne that is deere unto thee, a beloved bosome sinne, (as all men are marvellous subject to love some sinne above another) there must be for the mortification of this, a greater labour taken than for a lesse corruption: these are called in Scripture, the *right eye*, and the *right hand*; and as men are very loth to part with these members of the body, even so are they loth to part with their beloved sins which are deere unto them.

The second error, is of those that think if they have once mortified their sins, it is sufficient, they need not

I  
Errors of  
men about  
mortifica-  
tion.

*Simile.*

2

F 2

care

*Simile.*

*Simile.*

The fruit-  
lesse paine  
of the Pa-  
pists in  
this point.

care for any more, they have now done with this work. But these men are deceived, for they must know that the worke of Mortification is a continuall worke, because the heart is not so mortified, but there is still sinfull corruptions in it; so that if there be not a continuall worke of Mortification, it will prove filthy. The heart of man is like the ballast of a ship that leakes, though thou pumpe never so fast, yet still there is worke: even so, the heart is a fountaine of all manner of uncleannesse, there is much wickednesse in it, therefore wee had need pray for a fountaine of spirituall light; that is, of sanctification, that we may not be drowned in our corruption: Or, it is like a brazen Candlestick, which although it be made marvellous cleane, yet it will presently soyle, and gather filth; so it is with the heart of man, if this work of Mortification doe not continue, it will soyle and grow filthy.

Now in this worke of Mortification, the Papists seeme to take great paines for the mortifying of sinne, and indeed they might seeme to us to bee the onely men that take pains for this grace, if we did not meet with that clause, *Col. 2.23.* where the Apostle saith, that this afflicting of the body is but formall, *will-worship*; they prescribe for the disease a quite contrary medicine; for as the disease is inward, so the medicine must be inward: Now Mortification is a turning of the heart, a change of the heart, a labour of the heart, but whipping and beating of the body is but as it were the applying of the plaister it selfe; for an outward plaister cannot possibly cure an inward disease; that is, a disease of the soule, but if the disease be inward then

then the cure must bee wrought inwardly by the Spirit. Notwithstanding, I confesse there are outward means to be used, which may much further the work of Mortification, but yet we must take heed of deceit that may be in them, that we doe not ascribe the worke unto them; for if we doe, they will become snares unto us; and therefore to prevent all danger of deceit from thee, I will here set them downe.

The first outward meanes, is, *A moderate use of lawfull things*; that is, when men use lawfull things in a lawfull manner; as a moderation in dyet, in cloaths, in recreations, and pleasures, a moderate use of a lawfull calling, and many more which maybe means to further this Worke; but yet wee must take heed of excesse in these lawfull things; that is, wee must take heed that wee doe not goe to the utmost of them; for if wee doe, it is a thousand to one wee shall exceed. As for example, It is lawfull for a man to eate, and to drinke, and to use the creatures of God for his nourishment; and it is lawfull for a man to cloathe his body, and use recreations so farre forth as they may serve for the good of his body; but if hee use these inordinately, that is, if hee eate to surfet, and drinke to bee drunken, and use his pleasure to satisfie his lusts by neglecting his place and Calling; they are so far from being meanes of Mortification, that they become utter enemies unto the worke: therefore if you would have this outward meanes an help to mortification, that is, if you would have them to bridle Nature, then looke that you use lawfull things moderately.

The outward meanes which further Mortification.

First, moderation in lawfull things.

Excesse in lawfull things is dangerous



The second outward meanes  
vowes and promises.

Vowes when lawfull.

How to be esteemed  
of and made:

3

The second outward meanes are *Vowes and Promises*, and these in themselves simply are good, and may bee a good meanes to Mortification, for they are as an Obligation to binde a man from the doing of such or such a thing; for so the proper signification of a Vow is, to binde a man, as it were, to his good behaviour, alwayes provided, that it bee of indifferent things: that is, of things that be lawfull, else Vowes bind not a man to the doing of that which is evill: now if it be made in things lawfull, and to this end, for the brideling of our evill disposition of nature, that we will not doe this or that thing, or if wee finde our nature more subject to fall, and more inclined unto one sinne than another, or more addicted unto some pleasure than another, to make a Vow in this case it may bee a meanes to bridle our affection in this thing. But here we must take heed, that wee make them not of absolute necessity, by ascribing any divine power to them whereby they are able to effect it, but to esteeme them things of indifferencie, which may either bee made or not made, or else they become a snare unto us: Againe, if thou makest a Vow in this case, that thou wilt not doe such a thing, or such a thing; if it be for matter of good to thy soule, make conscience of it, take heed thou breake not thy Vow with God in this case; for as this ties thee in a double bond, so the breach of it becomes a double sinne: Againe, take heed that thy vow be not perpetuall, for then it will be so farre from being a meanes of thy good, that it will be a snare unto evill; for when men make perpetuall vowes, at last they become a burden, and



and men love not to beare burdens : Therefore , if you make a vow,make it but for a time; that is, make it so that you may renew it often , either weekly, or monethly,or according as you see necessitie require ; so that when time is expired , you may either renew them, or let them cease. Now if you observe this in the making of your vowes,it may be another meanes unto this Worke; otherwise it will be a snare.

The third outward meanes, is, *The avoiding of all occasions of sinne* : When a man avoids either the company of such men as formerly were a meanes to provoke him to sinne , or the doing of such actions as may provoke lust or sinne in this kinde,or places that are infectious this way ; this will be a meanes to mortification. And this we find was that command which God laid upon every *Nazarite*, *Num. 6. 4.* they must not only abstaine from strong drinke , but also they must cast out the huskes of the Grapes, lest they be an occasion of the breach of their vow : So in *Exod. 12. 15.* the children of Israel were not only commanded to abstaine from the eating of unleavened bread, but it must bee put out of their houses, lest the having of it in their houses, should bee an occasion to make them to breake the Commandement : Thus wee see that the avoiding of the occasion of sinne , will bee a meanes to keepe us from sin.

But some will say, I am strong enough, I need not have such a care to avoid the occasions of sinne : it is true, it is for Babes, and such as are weake Christians, to abstaine from such and such occasions ; but as for me that have beene a Professor a long time, and have  
such

The third outward meanes. Avoiding occasion to sin.

object.

Answ.

such a strength and measure of faith, I need not much to stand upon these termes.

To this I answer, that this is mens weaknesse thus to object, for this want of feare ariseth from the want of spirituall strength; for this is the nature of spirituall strength in a man, when he feares sinne, and the occasions of sinne, the more he feares in this case, the stronger he is; and the lesse he feares, the weaker he is; the lesse spirituall strength he hath, whatsoever he may seeme to have: therefore, dost thou finde want of spirituall feare in thee, then thou maist justly feare thine estate; for if thou hast true grace in thee, it will be so farre from making of thee carelesse, that it will make a double hedge and ditch about thy soul. Again, know that all the strength thou boasts of, is but habituall grace, and what is habituall grace but a creature, and in relying upon it, *thou makest flesh thine arme*; that is, thou puttest more trust and confidence in a creature, than in God, which is a horrible sinne, and flat idolatry: therefore you see this is mens weaknesse thus to object.

The 4<sup>th</sup>  
outward  
meanes.  
Fasting &  
Prayer.

The fourth outward meanes is, *Fasting and Prayer*, though abused by the Papists, yet very necessary, and a good outward meanes to Mortification, being used lawfully: for what is Fasting but a curbing of the flesh, and a pulling of it down, a brideling of Nature, and a kinde of mortifying of the body: and what is Prayer, but a praying or begging of grace, or for the preservation of grace, and power against corruptions? These two things are very commendable, and much used in the Primitive Church; for the Apostle saith,

*Let*

*Let Fasting and Prayer bee made for all the Churches :* which if it had not beene necessary, he would not have commended it unto the Church. And I see no reason why it should be so much neglected amongst us, especially at this time, in regard of the affliction of the Church abroad, whose necessity requireth it, and also being a thing so acceptable to God, and commendable in the Church, I would it were in greater favour and request amongst us.

The third meanes, if you would have your sinnes mortified, is to labour to get the assistance of the Spirit; for this must of necessity follow, or else the other two will nothing availe us; for what will it a-vaile us though we have a willing heart to part with sin, and vvhat though we take paines in the mortifying of our lusts, if the Spirit do not accompany us, all is nothing worth; therfore if thou wouldest have this vvorke effectually done, thou must get the Spirit.

3  
Meanes,  
The assistance of  
the Spirit

But this may seeme a strange thing, a thing of impossibility to get the spirit; for you vvill say, Howv is it in our povver to get the spirit? Howv can vve cause the spirit to come from heaven into our hearts, seeing our Saviour saith, *Io. 3. 8. That the wind blow eth where it listeth;* that is, the spirit vvorketh vvhere it listeth: novv if the spirit bee the agent and vvorker of every grace, then howv is it in our povver to get him?

Object.

To this I ansvver, howvsoever I grant that the spirit is the agent & vvorker of every grace, yet I say, there may be such meanes used by us, vvhereby vve may obtaine the spirit; and therefore the Apostle saith, *Rom. 8. 13. If you live after the flesh, you shall die, but if*

Ans<sup>r</sup>.

G

you

*you mortifie the deeds of the flesh you shall live* : which must be done by the spirit ; for the Apostle makes us the Agents, and the spirit the instrument, whereby he shewes us thus much, That it is possible not onely to get the spirit, but also have the worke of the spirit ascribed to us.

How the  
Spirit may  
be won or  
lost.

Now as there are meanes to get the spirit, so also there is meanes to hinder the spirit ; so that the spirit may be won or lost, either by the doing or the not doing of these three things.

1

First, if thou wouldest have the spirit, then thou must know the spirit ; that is, so to know him as to give him the glory of the worke of every grace : for how shall we give the spirit the glory of every grace if we know not the spirit? And therefore our Saviour makes the want of the knowledge of the spirit the reason that men doe not receive the spirit : *Ioh. 14. 17. I will send unto you the Comforter, whom the world cannot receive, because they know him not* : that is, the world knoweth not the pretiousnesse of the spirit, therefore they lightly esteeme of him; but you know him, and the excellency of him, therefore you highly esteeme of him : The first meanes then to have the spirit, is, Labour to know the spirit, that you may give him the glory of every grace.

2

Secondly, if thou wouldest have the spirit, then take heed that thou neither resist the spirit, nor grieve nor quench it.

How the  
Spirit is  
resisted.

First, take heed thou *resist* not the spirit, now a man is said to resist the spirit, when against the light of nature and grace he resisteth the truth; that is, when by

by arguments, and reasons & ocular demonstrations laid before him, whereby he is convicted of the truth of them, yet knowing that they are truth, hee will notwithstanding set downe his resolution that he wil not doe it; this is to resist the Spirit : Of this resisting of the Spirit we read in *Acts 6.10.* compared with *Acts 7.51.* it is said of Stephen, that *they were not able to resist the Wisdome, and the Spirit by which he spake*; that is, hee overthrew them by argument and reason, and they were convinced in their Consciences of the truth: & yet for all this it is said, *Acts 7.51. Ye have alwaies resisted the Spirit; as your fathers have done, so doe yee*: that is, howsoever ye were convicted in your Consciences of the truth of this doctrine which I deliver, yet you have set downe your resolution, that you will not obey. Now this is a grievous sinne; for sins against God and Christ shal be forgiven, they are capable of pardon, but the resisting of the spirit, that is, sinning against the Light of the spirit, is desperate and dangerous.

*Acts 6.10  
& 7.51.*

Secondly, what is meant by grieving of the spirit? Now a man is said to *grieve* the spirit when hee commits any thing that makes the spirit to loath the soule; and therefore the Apostle saith, *Grieve not the Spirit, Ephes. 4.30.* that is, by foule speeches and rotten communication; for the Apostle in the former Verse had exhorted them from naughty speeches, *Let* (said hee) *no evill Communication proceed out of your mouthes*, & then presently adjoynes, *and grieve not the Spirit*: for if you give your selves to corrupt Communication and rotten speeches, you will grieve the

How the  
Spirit is  
grieved.

spirit, it will be a meanes of the spirits departure: the spirit is a cleane spirit, & he loves a cleane habitati- on, a heart that hath purged it selfe of these corrupti- ons. Therefore when you hear a man that hath rotten speeches in his mouth, say, that man grieves the spi- rit; for there is nothing so odious & contrary to man as these are to the spirit; and therefore if you would keepe the spirit, then let your words be gracious, *pow- dred with salt*; that is with the grace of the spirit pro- ceeding from a sanctified heart: and as speeches so all evill actions; in like manner, grieve the heart.

How the  
Spirit is  
quenched.

1

2

Thirdly, what is meant by quenching of the spirit; A man is said to *quench* the spirit, when there is a carelesnes in the using of the means of grace wherby the spirit is increased; that is, when men grow care- les & remisse in the duties of Religion, either in hear- ing, reading, praying, or meditating. Again, when a man doth not cherish every good motion of the Spi- rit in his heart, either to pray, or to heare, &c. but lets them lie without practice, this is a quenching of the spirit, therfore the Apostle saith, *2 Thes. 5. 19. Quench not the Spirit*; that is, by a neglect of the meanes.

Thirdly, if you would get the spirit, you must use prayer; for prayer is a speciall meanes to get the Spi- rit; & it is the same meanes that Christ used, when he would have the holy Ghost for his Disciples he prai- ed for him, as you may see, *Jo. 14. 14. I wil pray the father, & he wil send the Comforter unto you*; that is, the holy Ghost; for he can comfort indeed, and he is the true Comforter; and indeed there is no true comfort but what the Spirit brings into the heart. Now that

the

the spirit may be obtained by prayer, is proved *Luk. 11. 13.* where our Saviour makes it plaine by way of opposition to earthly parents; *For (saith hee) if your earthly parents can give good things unto their children, then how much more will your heavenly Father give the holy Ghost unto them that aske Him*: Therefore if thou wouldest draw the holy Ghost into thy heart, then pray for him; Prayer is a prevailing thing with God, it is restlesse, and pleasing unto God, it will have no deniall; and to this purpose, saith God to *Moses, Wherefore dost thou trouble me?* that is, wherefore art thou so restlesse with me that thou wilt have no deni- all till I grant thee thy desire? so then if you will pre- vaile with God by praier, you may obtain the spirit.

The fourth meanes, if you would have your sins mortified, is, To walke in the spirit; that is, you must doe the actions of the new man; and therefore the Apostle saith, *Gal. 5. 16. Walk in the spirit.* Now here by the spirit is not meant the holy ghost, but the Re- generate part of man; that is, the new man, whose actions are the duties of holinesse, as Prayer, hearing the Word, receiving the Sacraments, works of Cha- rity, either to the Church in generall, or to any par- ticular member of it; and there must not onely be a bare performing of them; for so an hypocrite may doe, but there must be a delight in them, that is, it must rejoyce the soule when any opportunity is offer- red vvhereby any holy duty may be performed. But on the contrary, vvhen vve grovv remisse in praier, or in any other duty, the devil takes an occasion by this to force us to some sin; hereupon we presently yeeld,

*Luk. 11.  
13.*

4  
Meanes, to  
walke in  
the Spirit.



*Simile.*

because wee want strength of Grace, which by the neglect of that duty we are weake in. We know some physicke is for restoring, as well as for weakening, thereby to preserve the strength of the body; now this walking in the actions of the new man, is to preserve the strength of the soule, it preserves spirituall life in a man, it enables him to fight against Corruption, and lusts; for what is that which weakens the soule, but the actions of the old man? Therefore if you would mortifie your lusts, you must walke in the Spirit.

5  
Meanes,  
Faith.  
Act. 15. 9.

Eph. 3. 17.

The fifth meanes, if you would mortifie your lusts, is this, You must get Faith: so saith the Apostle, *Acts 15. 9. Faith purifieth the heart;* that is, it slayeth the corruption of the heart, it mortifies every inordinate desire of the heart, it purgeth out the filthinesse of our nature, it makes it a new heart in quality; that is, it makes it fit to receive grace, and who would not have a heart thus fitted to good? Again, It is said, *Eph. 3. 17. that Christ may dwel in your hearts by Faith:* as if hee should say, Faith will purge the heart; for where Faith is, Christ is, and Christ will not dwel in a rotten heart, that is impure, & not in some measure sanctified by the spirit.

*obj. 1*

But you will say, there are divers kindes of Faith, what Faith is this then that thus purifieth the heart?

*Ans. 1.*

By Faith in this place is meant a justifying Faith; Faith that applieth Christ and his righteousness in particular unto a mans selfe for his justification, and hereupon he is raised up to holinesse, and enabled, out of love unto Christ to mortifie sinne.

Now



Now the order of this grace in a Regenerate man, is wonderfull; for first, the spirit, which is the holy Ghost, comes and enlightens the mind, then it works Faith, and then faith drawes down Christ, and when once Christ comes, he takes possession of it, never resting till he hath rid the heart of the evill disposition of nature with a loathing of it; then the Regenerate man hereupon out of love unto Christ, and hatred unto sin, begins to mortifie his corruptions.

But you will say, How can the Spirit of Christ, which is the holy Ghost, dwell in the heart, seeing he is in heaven?

To this I answer, that the spirit dwels in the heart as the Sunne in a house; now we know that the proper place of the Sunne is in the Firmament, yet wee say the Sunne is in the house, not that wee meane that the body of the Sunne is there, but the beames of the Sunne are there in the house: so we say, that the proper place of the holy Ghost is in heaven; and when we say he is in the heart of a Regenerate man; we doe not meane essentially, but by a divine power and nature; that is, by sending his Spirit into the heart, not onely to worke Grace in the heart, but to dwell therein. Now when the spirit hath taken possession of the heart, it drawes and expells away all the darkenesse of the minde, and makes it to looke and to see Christ in a more excellent manner than before, assuring him of perfect Iustification, and remission of his sinnes.

And here the error of many is met withall, in the matter of Mortification; they will have Mortificati-

The order of Faith in the Regenerate.

Obj. 2

Ans. 2.  
How Christ dwels in the heart.  
Simile.

Error about Mortification confuted.

on

on first wrought, and then they will lay hold upon Christ for remission of finnes. Oh, say they, if I could but finde this sin, or that sin mortified, then I would lay hold upon Christ, then I would beleeeve; for alas, how can I looke for remission of finnes, how dare I lay hold, or how can I lay hold upon Christ, when I find that my corruptions have such hold on me? But these are deceived, for this is contrary to the Worke of the Spirit: for first, Faith assureth of pardon, and then followes Mortification; that is, when a man is once assured of pardon of sinne, then he beginnes to mortifie, and to slay his corruption; for Mortification is a fruit of Faith; and therefore the Apostle saith, *Phi. 3. 10. That I may feele the power of his death, and the vertine of his Resurrection*: Now what is meant by this but the two parts of Repentance, Mortification and Vivification? The Apostle beleevd before, and now hee would have his Faith appeare in the Grace of Mortification, that he might sensibly feele it. And therefore, if you would have your finnes mortified, you must by Faith draw Christ into your hearts.

6  
Meanes,  
spirituall  
Ioy.

The sixth meanes, if you would have your finnes mortified, is, to get spirituall Joy. But this may seeme a strange thing to mortifie corruption by; a man or a woman would rather thinke that this were a meanes to increase sin: but it is not so; for spirituall Ioy is a speciall meanes to mortifie sin, if we do but consider the nature of Mortification; for as I said before, what is Mortification but a turning of the heart, a working in it a new disposition: Now we know when the heart is not regenerate it is full of sorrow, and joy

joy in this estate increaseth sin: But when the heart is turned from sin to Grace, that is, heavenly disposed, there is a pleasant Object represented unto the eye of the soule, as Christ, Iustification, Remission of sins, and Reconciliation: and hence ariseth a spirituall Ioy in the soule, which rejoycing is a Mortification of sinne; for when a man or woman sees such excellencies in Christ, (as before) he so rejoyceth in them, that he loatheth whatsoever is contrary to them. As a man that hath gotten a faire Inheritance which formerly was content with a small Cottage, but now the right that he hath to the other, makes him despise that: so it is with a Regenerate man, this spirituall Ioy makes him basely to esteeme of sinne, and his naturall estate: and therefore saith the Apostle, 1 Cor. 15, 31. *I protest that by the rejoycing I have in Christ Iesus, I dye daily:* that is, that spirituall Ioy which hee had in Christ, of Iustification and Remission of sins, and that sight of glory which he saw by Faith, mortified sinne in him, made him basely to esteeme of his corruptions. We see, by example, a man that is wrought upon by the Law, or the Iudgements of God, may for a time leave some sinne, and rejoyce in good, as *Herod heard Iohn gladly;* and yet this his Ioy doth not mortifie sinne, because it is not wrought by the spirit upon an apprehension of the love of God; that is, it doth not proceed from the right Root; for spirituall Ioy that mortifies sinne, ariseth from an assurance of Remission of sinnes; but this ariseth from some other sinister respect, or else for feare of hell. Now that spirituall Ioy mortifies sinne, the Wise-man proves,

*Simile.*

H

*Prov,*

*Pro. 2. 10.* compared with the 16. *Verse, When wisdom entreth into thy heart, and knowledge is pleasant to thy Soul, &c. it shal keep thee from the strange woman. When Wisdom entreth into thy heart;* that is, when the Spirit enlightens thy minde to see, grace and knowledge is pleasant unto thee, when thou doest rejoyce in the knowledge of Christ, and graces of the Spirit, then it shall keepe thee from the strange woman; that is, from inordinate affections, which otherwise would bring thee to destruction. Thus you see that spirituall Ioy is an excellent meanes to Mortification.

7  
Meanes,  
Humility.

Humble-  
nesse of  
minde  
what it is.

The seventh meanes, if you would have your sins mortified, is, Humblenes of minde: this is an excellent meanes to Mortification, for when the heart is proud, it will not yeeld; that is, it is unfit for grace; for there is nothing so contrary unto the nature of the Spirit, as a proud heart; and therefore the Apostle saith, *1 Pet. 5. 5. God resisteth the proud, but he gives grace to the humble. He resisteth the proud;* that is, hee doth stand in opposition against him as one most contrary unto him; he rejecteth his praier and his actions; because they proceed from a proud heart: but *hee gives grace to the humble;* that is, the humble heart is fit to receive grace, therefore he shall have every grace necessary to salvation, as Faith, Repentance, Mortification, Peace of Conscience, and Remission of sins. Now this humblenesse of minde is a base esteeming of a mans selfe in an acknowledgment of his unworthinesse to receive any grace with an high esteeme of Gods love; which indeed may seeme to be contrary to spirituall Ioy, but it is not so; for the more humble

ble any man or woman is, the more spiritual joy they have: it is encreased by humility, it is decreased by pride; the humble heart is alwaies the joyfullest heart; for the more grace the more humbleness, & the more humility the more spiritual Ioy, for wher there is a want of grace, there must needs be a want of spirituall joy. Now dejection and humility are of a contrary nature; a man may be cast downe, and yet not be humble; humbleness of minde is more inward than outward, but the other may be outward but not inward; therefore if you would have your sins mortified, get an humble heart: for it is said, *Psal. 34. 18. The Lord is nigh unto them that are of a broken heart*: a broken heart is an humble heart: and, *Ezek. 36. 26. A new heart, and a new spirit will I give you*: that is, when I have throughly humbled you, and cleansed you from your rebelliousness against me, then I will doe this and this for you: well then, labour for humbleness of minde, if you would have your sinnes mortified. Thus much of the word *Mortifie*.

Ezek. 36.  
26.

Wenow come to a third point, and that is, what are those things that are to be mortified? and these the Apostle calls in generall, *Earthly members*: Hence we note.

*That all earthly members are to be mortified,*

Doct.

For the better explaining of this point, we will first speak of the general, & then of the particulars: but first of all, because the words are hard we will shew you by way of explanation, first, what is meant by *members*; and secondly, what is meant by *earthly members*.

For the first; What is meant by *Members*? By Mem-

I

What is  
here  
meant by  
Members.

*bers* is meant sinne, or any foule affection of the heart, when the heart is set upon a wrong object, or else upon a good object, yet exceeding either in the manner or the measure, makes it a sinne: as first, when a mans heart is set upon a base object, as the satisfying of his eyes according to the lust of his heart, or set upon his pleasure inordinately to the satisfying of his lusts; now these are base objects. Again, there are other objects which in themselves are good and may be used, as care of the world, and the things of the world: a man may lawfully care for the things of this life that hath a charge, or a man may use his pleasure for recreation, or may seek after his profit, thereby to provide for his family; but if the care for the world, and the things of this world, exceed either in the manner or the measure, that is, if they be gotten unlawfully, and if the heart lust after them, if they breed a disorder in the soule, and a neglect of grace, then they become sinne.

Why called  
Members.

Reas. I.

2 Pet. 1. 3.

Now they are called *members* for these reasons. The first reason is, because these base affections fill up the heart; that is, they make the heart fit for all manner of sinne, even as the members of the body make the body fit for action: now we know that the body is not perfect, if the members be not perfect, so when the heart is not filled with these members, it may be fit for sinne but not for every sinne, but this filling of it makes it fit for all sinne; and therefore the Apostle saith, 2 Pet. 1. 3. *According to his divine power he hath given us all things*; that is, by divine nature we all come to the knowledge of the Faith, now that which

which is contrary to the spirit, and the knowledge of him, is made up by these base affections, even as the body is made up and complete by its members.

Secondly, they are called *Members*, because these base affections doe the actions of the unregenerate part, even as the members of the body doe the actions of the body; for they receive into the heart all manner of sinne, and thence they send base affections into all the rest of the faculties.

Reas. 2.

Thirdly, they are called *Members*, because they are *weapons of unrighteousnes*, for so the Apostle calls them even as the actions of the new man are called the *weapons of righteousness*; that is, the care for the actions of the new man. Now we know that it is the property of one member to fight for the good of another; as we see, one member will suffer it selfe to be cut off & seperated from the body for the good of the rest; and so it is in like manner with these, for all will joyn together for the mortifying of sinne one in another. On the other side, these weapons of unrighteousnesse, they fight for one another against Grace, they are carefull to performe the actions of the old man, and to fullfill every lust of the flesh.

Reas. 3.

Fourthly, they are called *Members*, because they are as deare unto the heart, as any member is unto the body, and therfore in Scripture they are called the *right hand*, and the *right eie*, *Mat. 5. 29.* that is, they are as deare, and stick as close unto the heart, and will as hardly be separated from it as the nearest and dearest member of the body: thus much of the word *member*.

Reas. 4.

Secondly, what is meant by *Earthly members*? By

2

H 3

Earthly



What is  
meant by  
earthly  
Members.

*Earthly Members* is meant all earthly affections, as immoderate cares, inordinate lusts; or it is a depraved disposition of the soule, whereby it is drawne from heavenly things to earthly; that is, it is drawne from a high valuing of heavenly things to a base esteeme of them, and from a base esteeming of earthly things, unto an high esteeme of them; this is earthly mindednesse. But for the better explaining of this Point; first, wee will shew what it is to be earthly minded: secondly, what it is to be heavenly minded.

What it is  
to bee  
earthly  
minded.

For the first, what it is to be earthly minded. It is to mind earthly things, or heavenly things in an earthly manner, that is, when the soule is depraved so of spirituall life that it looks upon grace & salvation with a carnall eye, when it is represented unto it, because it is but naturall, it is not enlightened by the spirit; now till a man be enlightened by the spirit, he cannot see spirituall things in a spirituall manner. Howsoever, I grant that by the light of nature, a man being endued with a reasonable soule, therby may come to discern of spiritual things, yet so as but by a common illumination of the spirit, as we call it, not as they are, but only as he conceives of them by his naturall reason: for first, by nature a man may conceive of spiritual things but not spiritually; for nature can go no further than nature: now what is comperible and agreeable to nature he hath a taste of, he sees things so far as they are futable unto his nature; but nature can looke no further; for this is the property of nature, it goes all by the outward sense and appetite; and no man can apply spiritual things by the senses, but earthly things.

Second-



Secondly, by the affections a man may conceive of spirituall things, for the affections are the proper seat of love, and a man being endued with love, may be affected with heavenly things, so far as they are sweet unto nature; & hence may arise feare of losing them, not because they are heavenly things, but because they are sweet unto his nature. Besides, the affections may reſtraine him, and turne him from esteeming of things baſe, to an esteeming of things that are more excellent, and yet be but earthly minded: for it is not the affection to good; that proves a man to be good, but it is the rice of the affection that is the ground from whence they spring; namely, from a heart enlightened by the spirit: *Herod* may affect *Iohn*, & *Iohns* doctrine, but this is not bred by the spirit, but a carnall affection.

Thirdly, by the understanding or minde, a man may come to conceive of spirituall and heavenly things; his mind may be enlightened with the knowledge of them, and yet be but earthly minded: As for example.

First, he may see a vertue in heavenly things above all things in the world, he may conceive of them by looking into them, so that a vertue and power may appeare in them excellling every vertue in any thing else; and yet not renewed.

Secondly, if hee be of a more noble spirit he may doe good, either for Church or Common-wealth: he may be very liberall and bountifull unto any that shall seeke unto him in this kinde, and hereupon may grow remiſſe after the things of this world, and so be

not

3  
How a  
man may  
come to  
know spi-  
rituall  
things &  
yet not be  
renewed.

I

2

not all so violently carried away after covetousnesse, and yet not be removed.

3

Thirdly, he may come to see holinesse in the children of God, and thereupon be wonderfully affected with it, insomuch that he may wish himselfe the like: nay more, he may wonder at their holinesse, and be astonished with an admiration thereof, as one overcome of it, and yet not be renewed.

4

Fourthly, he may come to see into the attribures of God, both the communicative Attributes which are communicated to the Creatures, as Iustice, Mercie, Righteousnesse, Patience, and the like; and also those that are not communicable, but essentially proper to God, as Omnipotency, Omnipresence, and the like; and hereupon he may acknowledge God to be such an one as these declare of, or els as he hath made himselfe knowne in his Word: as wee see *Nebuchadnezzar*, *Dan*, 4. 34. and yet be not renewed.

Da. 4. 34.

5

Mar. 6. 20.

Fifthly he may feele the sweetnesse of the promises of remission of finnes, justification, and reconciliation, and rejoyce in them, as *Herod* heard *John* gladly *Mark*. 6. 20. that is, he was glad to heare *John* preach repentance and remission of finnes, he felt sweetnesse in this, so he was content to heare that it was not lawful for him to have his brothers wife, but he was not content to obey: in like manner, any man or woman may finde sweetnesse in the promises, and yet not be renewed.

6

Sixthly, he may beleieve the resurrection to life, and hereupon rejoyce after it, because hee beleeves there is a reward laid up for the righteous with Christ  
and

and may desire to be made partaker of it with them, and yet not bee renewed : For if you looke into this man, none of all these have the first seat in his heart, but they are, as it were, in a second roome or closet; for earthly things have the first and principall seat in his heart, but these come in after, as handmaids servants unto the other, and therefore have no spirituall taste to him.

To make this plaine, let us consider the order of the faculties of the soule : the minde is the principall faculty, and this rules the will and affections : now the mind being earthly disposed, the will and affections can goe no further than the mind guides them : every faculty hath an appetite, & the soule of a man hath an understanding which governes, now looke what the minde of a man loves or hates, that the will wils, or wils not; for the will is but the appetite and followes the understanding. Again, every faculty in man hath a sense, and by that it is drawne to affect that which it chuseth, for the desire follows the sense; and as it is with one faculty, so it is with all the other of the faculties; for the faculties suite all after the senses, and affect that which the minde affects : and thus the will & affections hanging upon the mind, it is impossible that the will of a man should will and affect any other thing than that which the mind is affected with.

But here some Questions may be moved : the first Question is this; But is there such light in the understanding as you say, then it seemes that a naturall man may by the light of Nature come unto true knowledge?

The order  
of the fa-  
culties of  
the soule.

*Ques. 1.*

Ans. I.

How a naturall man may know spirituall things.

To this I answer, that a naturall man may come for substance as farre as a spirituall man, but not in a right manner; the Apostle saith, *Rom. 8. 5. They that are of the flesh, do savour the things of the flesh: & 1 Cor. 2. 14. The naturall man perceiveth not the things of the Spirit*: where the Apostle saith, he doth not know them at all, for he wants a sanctified knowledge of them; he knowes them, but not by that knowledge which is wrought by the Spirit alwayes accompanied with sanctification; he knowes them for substance, but not in the right manner, as to be a rule to his life. A carnall man may speake of spirituall things, but not religiously; that is, with an inward feeling of that in his heart which he speakes of: so also a carnall man may have light, but it is but a darke light; hee may have light in the understandnig, but it is not transcendent unto the rest of the faculties to transforme and enlighten them, and therefore, though hee have light yet still he remaines in darkenesse.

What it is  
to be heavenly minded.

Eph. 4. 23.

The second thing to be considered is this, What it is to be heavenly minded: A man is said to be heavenly minded when there is a new life put into him, whereby he is able both to see & to speake of spirituall matters in a more excellent manner than ever he was: And therefore the Apostle saith, *Ephes. 4. 23. & be renewed in the spirit of your mindes*: that is, get a new kinde of life and light in your soule, for when Christ enters into the heart of any man or woman, hee puts another kinde of life into them then that which hee had by nature; the Spirit workes grace in the heart, and grace makes a light in the soule; it makes another kinde

kind of light than before ; for before there was but a naturall light, a sight of Christ & salvation, but with a naturall eye; but now there is a spirituall light in his soul wherby he is able to see Christ in another manner, and therefore it is called the *light of the minde, the boring of the eares, & the opening of the eyes*; that is, there is a change and alteration wrought in him whereby hee can perceive spirituall things; his eares are opened to heare the mysteries of salvation, with a mind renewed to yeeld obedience unto them, making them the rule of his life, and his eyes are opened to see the excellencies that are in Christ, as Remission of sinnes, Iustification, and Reconciliation in a more excellent manner than before; hee is, as it were, in a new world, where he sees all things in another manner than before. Now I doe not say, that hee sees new things, but old things in a new manner; hee saw Iustification, Remission of sinnes, and Reconciliation before, but now hee sees these and Christ in a more excellent manner; there is, as it were, a new window opened unto him whereby hee sees Christ in a more plaine and excellent manner, and hereupon he is assured in the way of Confirmation of the Remission of sinnes: hee had a generall trust in Christ before, and hee saw a glimpse of him, but now hee enjoys the full sight of him; that is, such a sight as brings true comfort unto the soule. As a man that travels into a far Countrey sees at last those things which before he saw in a Map; hee saw them before, but in a darke manner; but now he hath a more exact and distinct knowledge of them: even so it is with a

*Simile.*

1 Cor. 2. 9  
opened.

Regenerate man, he saw Christ and the priviledges that are in Christ before, but darkely, as a were in a Map, onely by a common Illumination, but now hee sees them by the speciall Illumination of the Spirit through Grace : And therefore the Apostle saith, *1 Cor. 2. 9. The eye hath not scene, nor the eare heard, neither hath it entred into the heart of man to conceive of those things that God hath prepared for them that love Him.* Howsoever this place of Scripture be generally expounded & understood of the joyes of heaven, yet in my opinion, it is much mistaken; for by this place is meant those spiritual Objects that are shewn unto a man when the spirit begins first to enlighten him; *The eye hath not scene*; that is, which it hath not scene in right manner : hee never saw them in such a manner as now they are shown unto him: he now sees heavenly things in another manner, hee sees Iustification in another manner than before, hee sees remission of sinnes in another manner than before: so likewise he sees sinne in another hew than before; for now he sees remission of sins follow them as a medicine to heale them: **Againe**, he sees Iustification and Remission of sinnes in another hew, he sees them in an higher manner than before, he sees them now as sutable to himselfe, and necessary to salvation; before he saw them as good; but now he sees them as most excellent. As it is with a man that is well, so it is with a man that is not regenerated : now tell a man that is well, of Balsome and Cordials, what restoratives they are, and what good they will do to the body, yet he will not listen unto them because hee is well and needs them

not;

*Simile.*

not; bur tell them unto a man that is sicke and diseased, he will give a diligent eare unto them, because they are sutable for his disease: so it is with a spiritual man before he be regenerate, he listens not, he regards not spirituall things; when he heares of Iustification and Remission of sins, he slightly passeth them over, because he feeleth himselfe in health, and finds no want of them; for what should a man take and apply a plaister to a whole place that hath no need of such a thing? but when he is once renewed and mortified, then he finds these sutable to his disposition; and this is to be heavenly minded: A naturall man or woman may talke of grace; of Iustification, and Remission of sinnes, but they cannot say that these are mine, or that I stand in need of them; for so saith the Apostle, *1 Cor. 2. 14. The natural man perceiveth not the things of the spirit*: that is, he may talke of deepe points of Divinity, but not by the feeling of the Spirit; he may see God and Christ, but not in a right manner.

But you may say unto me, If a man heavenly minded may see thus farre, then when he comes once unto this estate, he needs not seeke any further Illumination.

To this I answer, that though the spiritual man be thus minded and enlightned, yet he must seeke for more; because this knowledge is but in part; *For wee know but in part*, saith the Apostle, *1 Corinth, 13. 12.* that is, though we know much of heavenly things, yet it is but a part of that we ought to know, or that wee should know, therefore wee must ever be breeding in the spirit, we must be ever growing towards

*Ques. 2.*

*Ans. 2.*



perfection: now there can be no growing till the mind be enlightned, for this is a worke of the minde; and so farre as the minde is enlightned, so farre is the will enlightned, and not only that, but the rest of the faculties are enlightned accordingly.

*Ques. 3.*

But you may againe say unto me, If this light which you speake of be seated in the mind, then how farre doth this light redound unto the rest of the faculties, seeing the other seeme not to be sensible of this light, because many times there is such rebellions in them?

*Ans. 3.*

*Simile.*

To this I answer, That earthly and heavenly mindednesse is seated in the understanding, will, or minde of a man: As for example; A Lanthorne is the proper seat of a Candle, now it receives not the Candle for it selfe, neither keepe it the light to it selfe, but it receives it in to preserve light, and to communicate it to others; even so doth the understanding, it doth not onely receive light for it selfe alone, but by preserving of it, it doth communicate his light to the good of the rest of the faculties, so the Apostle saith, *You are begotten by the word of Truth, Ia. 1. 18.* Now Truth is properly in the understanding, it is first there, and thence it doth communicate unto the rest of the faculties by redundance; I say by redundance, but not by infusion, that is, the light that is in the understanding doth redound to the enlightning of the rest, but it is conveyed to the rest by the Spirit, and so a man is renewed.

How the understanding enlightned, may doe good to the rest of the faculties.

Now for the better explaining of this, wee shall shew how the understanding being enlightned, may doe

doe good unto the rest of the faculties.

First, the Reason or Wisdome being first enlightened, it rests not there, but flowes by a redundancy unto the other faculties, and thereupon may take away those lets & impediments unto good: as thus, Whereas ignorance or infidelity was formerly a hinderance unto good things, making him that was ignorant incapable of the mysteries of salvation, so that he could not beleieve the promises of the Gospell, he could not bring his will and affections to embrace the truth; which ignorance is now taken away by that light that is communicated unto him by the understanding.

Secondly, although the understanding cannot remove feare and anger, because they are qualities of nature, and evill dispositions of the soul, which it got by *Adams* fall; yet it may hinder the growth of them, it may withstand the actions of them. As a Pilot cannot hinder the raging of the Seas, it is not in his power to make them calme, yet he can, by using meanes, doe so much as to save his ship: so a regenerate man, though he cannot stay his impatient anger and feare, yet he may keepe himselfe from the actions of impatient anger, and so bridle his immoderate feare, that he may not be distracted with it.

Thirdly, the understanding may do much good by instructions, when it is renewed, & therefore it comes many times that the rest of the faculties are overturned by the reason; as thus, when the will and affections are immoderately set upon a wrong object, the minde comes and instructs the will and affections of the vilenesse of the object, and the danger that will ensue;

I

2

*Simile.*

3

ensue; and then contrarily informing them of grace, propoundeth heavenly objects unto them; hereupon they become affected with them, and so are turned by the Reason.

4

Fourthly, it may doe much good by the ruling of them, for the understanding is the superior faculty of the soule, and therefore it becomes a guid unto the rest: now if the understanding be enlightned (as I told you) it doth communicate his light by redundancie unto the rest of the faculties, then it must needs follow that the understanding being enlightned truly with grace, & the other faculties partaking thereof, they must needs be ruled by it. Every inferiour is ruled by his superiour, or at least should be so; so every faculty should be subordinate unto the mind: now if there be rebellion in them, it is the disorder of the soule, as the other is the disorder of the State. Thus much for the explaining of these points, namely, what it is to be earthly minded, and what it is to be heavenly minded.

*Use I.*

The first Use then shall be, to reprove sharply such as favour the members of this body, and are inordinately affected with this earthly mindednesse, such also as cannot deny these members any thing that is pleasant unto them, whereas they should be suppressed and mortified by the spirit. The rich man feeds these members w<sup>th</sup> his riches, the covetous man with his covetousnesse, the proud man with his pride, and the ambitious man with his vain-glory, when as these are their greatest enemies, howsoever they are couzened by them, but if they did but know, if they were but

but truly enlightned with grace, they would perceiue the euill of these members, and how great an enemy this earthly mindednesse were unto them, and then they would starue their bodies, sooner than they should deceive them of their soules. For first, as there is nothing more hurtfull unto man than earthly-mindednesse; so, secondly, there is nothing more hatefull unto God; and thirdly, there is nothing more contrary unto the profession of Christianity, than the lo-ving of those earthly members.

For the first, I say that there is nothing in the world more hurtfull unto man than earthly-mindednesse; because it makes him worse than the *beasts*; the beasts doe not sin, but these earthly members are the cause of sinne in us, and sinne takes away the excellency of the creature. Innocency is the excellency of the creature, simply taken as he is a creature, and this was all the excellency that we had in *Adam*, but sin tooke away that excellency: therefore what *Iacob* said of *Reuben*, *Gen. 46. 4.* when he had defiled his bed, *Thou hast* (saith he *taken away my excellency*, that is, that which I outwardly respected most, may be said of every lust; for what a man keeps, that is his excellency; the wife is the husbands excellency, and therefore when shee is defiled, he hath lost his excellency; for as a man keepes or looseth that outward thing which he most respecteth, so he keepeth or looseth his excellency. The Starres that fall, when they are in the Element they shine and give light, and then they are said to keepe their excellency; but when they once fall, then they lose their excellency, because they have lost

I  
Nothing  
more  
hurtfull  
to man  
than earth-  
ly minded-  
nesse.

When  
men are  
said to  
to lose  
their ex-  
cellencies.

Simile.

their light and splendor ; so men are said to lose their excellencie when they give way unto their lusts.

*Reas. 1.*

*Simile.*

Sinne ouerly makes a man lose his excellency.

And the reason is, first, because when the mind affects earthly things, it mingles together two contraries, Grace and Christ, with sinne and the world, and so eclipseth the excellency of the one with the baseness of the other: As when gold and drosse are mingled, the baseness of the one doth corrupt the other, so as the excellency thereof doth not appeare: but mingle gold with silver, or let it be alone, and then it keepes his excellency, and is not eclipsed: even so, when a man is earthly-minded, and his affections are set upon base objects, w<sup>th</sup> that enlightned knowledge he hath, he minglerh an ignoble & base object together, and so loseth the excellency of it. Now there is nothing that can make a man to lose his excellency, but sin; for other things that happen unto a man are not able to take away his excellency, as reproaches and imprisonments in the world; for a man may keep himselfe heavenly minded for all the reproaches and imprisonments that he shall meet withall, if he can keepe out sinne; all other things are unto him but as a candle in a darke night, which makes a man see his way the better; so all things in the world cannot eclipse the grace of a Christian, but in the hardest estate he will so keepe his heavenly mindednesse, that his grace shall the more appeare.

*Reas. 2.*

Secondly, sinne pierceth men through; for that which is said of riches, *1 Tim. 6. 10.* is true of every sinne, *It peirceth them thorow with many sorrowes:* that is, it wounds his soule, and makes him to draw to his

owne

owne destruction : Againe, sinne having once gotten possession, will have no deniall; if once you give way unto it, it is restlesse; for when a man hath satisfied one lust, another comes to be satisfied, till at last his heart is hardened, and his Conscience hath lost all sense, and when it is thus with him, he is drowned in sin: he is, in this case, like the Silke-worme, that never rests turning herselfe in her web till at last she destroy herselfe: so earthly-minded men, when they are once caught in this snare, they never rest turning themselves from one sinne to another, till at last they destroy themselves.

Secondly, there is nothing more hatefull and offensive unto God than when a man is earthly-minded, for when a man is earthly minded, he sets up Idolatry in his heart : I speake not of the bodily prostration, howsoever in time it may be, he will be such an one; but I speake of covetousnesse, that spirituall Idolatry of the heart; as the Apostle calls it, w<sup>ch</sup> is when the heart is once sorted w<sup>th</sup> these earthly things, that it drawes all the faculties of the soule after them, so that the Commandements of God become a burthen unto him. Now there is nothing in the world more odious unto God than to be an Idolater, for he is a lothsome creature, one whom God hath left to himselfe: now God never leaves a man til he forsakes him, but when he doth forsake God, then he is left to himselfe: and this is properly called the hatred of God, for then God with-drawes from a man his Spirit & speciall providence, because he loathes him : And as it is with us, what a man loaths that he hates, and we

I

*Simile.*

2

Nothing  
so hatefull  
to God as  
earthly-  
minded-  
nesse.

know that a man cares not what becomes of that which he hates; so it is with God in this case: For, I say, the turning of a mans heart from spirituall things to earthly, is the setting up of Idolatry in the heart; and nature her selfe abhorres to have the affections drawne away: for as an Adulteresse is odious unto her husband, because her heart is drawn away from him; so an Idolater is odious unto God, because it drawes away the heart from God: and therefore the Apostle saith, *Iam. 4, 4. Know you not that the love of the world is enmity to God?* that is, if you love the world it will make you commit Idolatry, and then you are at enmity with God, and so consequently God and you are at odds, you stand in defiance one against another; for who is at greater enmity with God than an Idolater.

3  
Nothing  
lesse be-  
seemeth a  
professor  
than earth-  
ly-minded-  
nesse.

The third thing to be considered, is, That there is nothing in the world that lesse becometh a Christian man or woman, especially one that professeth Religion, than earthly-mindednesse; for this cause an unregenerate man is compared to a Swine, because all his delight is to paddle in the world, and to be wallowing in it, as in his proper place; for what would you have a Swine to doe, but to delight in things that are agreeable unto his nature? But for a man that professeth Religion, to fall from his Religion unto profanenesse, and to the love of the world, this is most odious unto God, this God hates with a deadly hatred, this is a *despising of God, and a trampling under foot the blood of Christ*: It is nothing for a prophane man that hath not given his name unto Christ, to lie wallowing



lowing in the world, and to goe from one sin to another; it is, as it were, but the putting off one garment to put on another, which is not unseemly; or the pulling of a ring off one finger to put it on to another, wherein seemes no undecency; so the signes of prophane men seeme not to be unseemly in regard of the persons from whence they come, for there is no other things, at leastwise better things to be expected from them: but for one that hath professed Christ, after long profession to fall greedily unto the world, this is unbecoming a Christian man; other things are contrary unto grace, but this forsaking of the world is futable unto grace. For a *covetous* man that is profane there is no contrariety in that, it is futable unto his disposition, but for any man that hath *tasted of heavenly mysteries*, as the *Apostle* saith, *Heb. 6. 6.* to fall away into a swinish disposition, as to covetousnesse, or pride, *he shal hardly be renewed by repentance*, that is, he wil hardly scrape off that blot of relapse: nay, many times the Lord meets with such by great judgments; as *Salomon* in his youth how did he maintaine Religion, yet in his age how fearefully did he fall into idolatry? *Asa* being young, honours God in his youth, yet he fell away in his age, and the holy Ghost hath branded him with three fearefull sins: and so *Abaziah*, he fell away from God to idolatry; and in his sicknes sent to witches to help him: how unanswerable were the ends of these to their beginnings; therefore take heed of Apostacy. I speake of this the more, because we see daily many in their youth are marveilous zealous, and pretend great love unto Religion, & yet if you marke the end

Simile.

Heb. 6. 6.

Difference  
betwixt  
the back-  
sliding of  
the Saints,  
and the  
wicked.

A three-  
fold cause  
of the  
backslid-  
ing of  
the godly.

Cause 1.

Cause 2.

of these (I speake not of all) who greater backsliders than them? and indeed this backsliding many times proves the portion of Gods children; the most holiest, and dearest of Gods Saints many times are subject unto this alteration, and yet be deare and precious in the sight of God: As we see in *David & Peter*.

But there is great difference betwixt the slacknesse of the Saints, and the wicked backsliding: the godly they may slacke, but it is but for a time; he is cold and remisse in the duties of holinesse, but it lasts not, it vanissheth away: on the other side, the wicked lye and continue in Apostacy unto the end; in these it is naturall, but unto the other it is but the instigation of the diuel working by some lust upon one of the faculties.

Now slacknesse or coldnesse of Gods children may seeme to proceed from a threefold Cause:

First, from that hollow-heartednes that is in the children of God, which like a hollow wall falls when it is shaken, because it was not firme: so their hearts being not firmly established in grace, nor rooted in the knowledge of Christ, when afflictions or reproaches come, it shakes downe that hold which they seemed to have of Christ.

Secondly, the next cause may proceed from the evill example of men, which by their insinuation may draw their affections away, and carry them from that love that they had towards God: therfore take heed to the insinuation of wicked men, they will first labour to know the desire of your heart, and then they will fit themselves accordingly to deceive you; and besides, the devill workes effectually by them.

Thirdly,

Thirdly, the last cause may proceed from this, that he is removed from under a powerfull Ministry w<sup>ch</sup> formerly he lived under, unto a careles shepheard, or at least an unprofitable one; hereupon he may grow remisse and cold in the duties of Religion: but neverthelesse although this ariseth from men, yet the cause is in themselves; for what is the reason that they fall, but because they finde spirituall things dead in them, and an in-lacke of grace. Therefore I beseech you take heed of falling away, for if a man should run in the wayes of holinesse, and catch heat; that is, be enlightened, and then sit downe in a consumption of grace, or fall sicke of the love of the world, surely it is a fearefull sinne: therefore let this teach every man to take heed to his standing.

First, for those that doe stand, let them take heed that nothing take away their hold, whether it be profit, pleasure, or delight: these the devill will use as instruments to beguile you, but take heed that you be not deceived by them.

Secondly, for those that have fallen unto earthly mindednesse, let them learne with *Philadelphia to repent and to doe their first workes*; that is, let them labour to get out of this condition.

Thirdly, for those that have not yet tasted of the sweetnesse of Christ, let them here learne to be ashamed of themselves, because they have neglected so great salvation: & those that have had the meanes of grace a long time, preach'd unto them in the evidence of the Spirit, and yet have not beene renewed; that is, have not felt their swinish disposition, may here be ashamed.

Cause 3.

I  
A caveat  
to those  
that stand.

2  
Those  
that have  
fallen  
Revel. 3.

3  
Those  
that have  
not yet  
tasted of  
the sweet-  
nesse of  
Christ.

1  
Young  
men.

2  
Old men.

Objections of  
earthly-  
minded-  
ness an-  
swered.  
*Obj. 2.*

shamed. But it is a hard matter to perswade the world of the truth of this point; the Ministers may speake & perswade, but it is God that must chang the heart, and make the man willing to have his corruptions mortified. Wee speake but to two sorts of people, young men and old: First, young men when they are perswaded to forsake the world, they reply, It stands not with their youth to set upon this worke; they are not able, or at least not willing to leave their pleasure. Secondly, old men, when they are perswaded to forsake the world, reply also and say, They have beene instructed, and have made choice of this, and therefore are now unwilling to repent of their earthly mindednesse, least they should be reputed remisse and weake in their judgments, & therefore now they will not chang their estates which they have lived so long in. But howsoever it is hard for a man to draw men out of their swinish condition, yet it is an easier worke if God will be the instructor, if he doe put his Spirit into the heart, it will easily expell the workes of the devil, those strong holds that Satan hath in the heart.

Now the reasons that make men minde earthly things, to sticke so fast unto them, are these: First, because earthly things are present. To this may be replied, It is true, earthly things are not at all to come, for that which wee have is present; those things of the world which wee enjoy and have in possession, are present, as riches, honour, and the like: yet there are other things that are present which are of a higher nature, which we ought to set our hearts upon, if we will be led by *presents*, for Ioy in the holy Ghost is present

present, and Iustification is present, and Regeneration is present, Remission of sinnes is present, Reconciliation is present; and you will say that these are farre better than the things of this world: But say that these were not present but to come, yet wee account it a part of wisdom to part with a thing present that is of small account, for hope of a better afterwards; who is there that will not part with a small thing present, upon condition of enjoying of a greater afterwards? the world and the things of the world are nothing in comparison of Grace and Salvation; therefore what if thou forsake all these things, upon condition you shall get eternall life for them hereafter. For this is the difference betweene reason and sense; nature is carried away by sense, it delights in that which it fees, now sense is present; but reason goes according to judgement, and rests upon hope: therefore let the children of God use their spirituall reason in the forbearing of present worldly delights, in hope of enjoying of better things; and take heed of sense; be not led away by it, for it is usually a great means to draw our heart and affections from Grace to earthly things. *Luke. 15. 23. the rich Glutton* when hee was in torment, had this answer from *Abraham, Sonne, Remember that thou in thy life time hadst thy pleasure:* that is, thou hadst it then when it was not a time for pleasure; thou wast led away by sense, and now thou must be punished. The Apostle, *1a. 5., 5* pronounceth a woe upon rich men, because *you received your consolation here;* that is, you have received pleasure in a wrong place, for the earth is no place of true pleasure; there-

L

fore

Difference  
betweene  
nature and  
sense.

Luk. 15.  
23.

Iam. 5. 5.

*Simile.*

fore you have received your consolation; you can expect no other pleasure hereafter, for you have sought true content where it is not; therefore woe unto you. A man that mindes earthly things is like a man that hath a great graspe, w<sup>ch</sup> cannot hold any thing more except hee let fall that which he hath: earthly minded men, they have their hearts full of earthly things and pleasure, and therefore it is not possible that they should gripe Christ and Grace, except they let fall that gripe that they have already of earthly things: Therefore this is a false reason that men doe object.

*Obj. 2.*

The second Objection is, because earthly things are sensibly felt, and in things that are sensibly felt, there is sweetnesse: but as for other things, they are onely conceived by the imagination, as Grace and other spirituall things.

To this I answer, men in this are exceedingly deceived: for if the lesser faculty be sensible, then much more the greater faculties, and if the inferiour part of the soule hath a sensible taste, then certainly the superiour part of the soule is the more sensible part: for the greater faculties have the greater sense, and as they are larger so they grow deeper. To explaine this, take a man that hath an afflicted Conscience, as the Conscience is the greatest faculty, so it hath the greatest sense in it; for what it apprehends it is presently sensible of, whether it be joy or sorrow.

Now in the matter of sense betweene the superiour and inferiour faculties, the Schoolemen make a threefold difference. First, say they, that sense which the understanding or mind hath, is permanent, it lasts

A threefold difference in the matter of sense betweene the superiour & inferiour faculties.

for ever, because the things themselves are permanent, it feels Grace, Justification, Remission of sins, it feels God, and Christ, and the Spirit; but the sense of the other faculties vanissheth and passeth away: As a man that hath for the present tasted a Sermon well, and another hath tasted a good worke, or a good turne done, which in time are forgotten; the remembrance of them lasts not for ever. Secondly, these naturall Senses are but for the present; that which you now taste is present, that which you tasted before is gone, this is the nature of these faculties; but it is not thus with the understanding. Thirdly, these senses lessen through defect and wearinesse; a man will be weary with eating of honey, though it be pleasant to the sense; a man is weary with meat, and with sleepe, with rest, and with pleasure, when as these are delights, & very pleasant in the fruition; but overmuch of any of these makes them a burthen: but the spirituall senses are not so, for they are endlesse; Justification, Remission of sinnes, and Reconciliation, are without end; therefore labour to finde the sweetnesse that is in God, rest not till thou get the Spirit which brings Grace into the heart; and doe but talke with those that have tasted of the sweetnesse, that have first tasted of earthly things, and now have tasted of spirituall, and they will tell you of the excellency of the one above the other. *Heb. 11. 14. & c.* They declare plainly, that they seeke a City, not in this world, for then they might return, but a heavenly place.

The third Objection is, because of the opinion and speech of men concerning these earthly things; and

2

3

Heb. 11. 14.

Obj. 3.



Esay. 6. 5.

Mar. 14. 11.

I

The Martyrs speech

this hath a great force: *Esay 6. 5. Woe is mee, for I am a man of uncleane lippes, and dwell in the midst of a people of uncleane lippes:* that is, I shall have a base opinion of this people, if I shall prophecy unto them. So *Mar. 24. 11. Many false prophets shall arise and deceive many:* that is, men shall be taken in a trap to doe evill, by the false opinion and speech of the multitude; for men that fall into errors, are alwayes drawne by fancy.

To this I answer, First, you shall finde them but mouth-friendes, and therefore when they perswade men by speech and opinion, it is because they would deceive; and therefore I beseech you take heed of them: It is a dangerous thing when the divell will *plow with our Heifer:* that is, when he will use our fancy and appetite as an instrument to draw us to sinne: You see the danger that *Adam* fell into, when *Eve* was made the Instrument, by being led by fancy and opinion; the devill shewes her the excellency of the Apple, and by his perswasion she is drawn to taste of it. So I read of a Martyr, who when he came to suffer, his friends perswaded him to turne, he answered thus, *You speake it out of love, But there is one within you who is mine enemy, that perswades you thus to speake.* In like manner say you, that the opinion and speech of men is good, but there is an enemy within that useth deceit. We have a proverb, *It is good telling of many after ones father:* so it is good trying the speeches of the dearest friends, lest there be deceit in them.

Secondly, to this I answer, to be sure not to be deceived by the false opinion of men, it is to get sound knowledge in the Word, and from it to gather a peremptory

emptory conclusion, that we will not be drawne no further than wee are warranted by that : Now a man must looke that he stand upon his owne bottome, & not wholly on another mans judgement. A man that sets himself upon a good ground, will stand fast when others shake and fall; now this ground is the word of God: & when wee have this ground, to resolve with *Ioshua*, that whatsoever others doe, *I and my house will serve the Lord*: and peremptorily to take up the resolution of *Peter*, *though all the world should forsake Christ, yet we will not*: I say a peremptory will to doe good, is good; though we have not power to effect it: but we must look that it be upon a good ground; for wee must know that the way to heaven is not abroad foot-way, where many footsteps appeare, as a path-way is to a great City; but it is a *narrow way*, and therefore we must throng hard: besides, there are not many going that way; and therefore we must not give eare unto the opinion and speeches of the multitude. You know a man of understanding, if a childe come unto him and speake of his rattles and bables, he will not answer him, because they are too base things for him to talke about; and if he doe speake unto him, it is because the childe wants understanding to conceive of other things: so it is with carnall men, as the *Apostle* saith, *2. Pet. 2, 12. They speak evil of those things they know not*, because they want spirituall knowledge: They are like a Countrey-man, that comes, & seeing one draw a *Geometricall* line, begins to wonder what it meanes, 'marvelling that he will spend his time in drawing of such a line, though he knowes well the use

A good ground required for doing of good.

*Simile.*

2 Pet. 2.  
12.

*Simile.*

1 Pet. 4. 4.

of it that drawes it; and to this purpose the Apostle saith, 1 Pet. 4. 4. *They marvell that we run not with them unto the same excessse of riot: that is, they cannot see the reason why we should not be as prophane as they.*

obj. 4.

The fourth reason wherefore men will not set upon these corruptions, is, because of a false opinion and overvaluing of them, and therefore they thinke they doe nothing in the getting of them but what they deserve, and that they are worthy their labour and paines.

To this I answer; Let men looke unto this, that they be not deceived in them, & compare them with the Scriptures: for if you judge of things as the Scripture doth, it will appeare that the reason is false, but if you doe not, although they be vanity, yet they will deceive you whatsoever you esteeme of them; for the truth is, that there is nothing in them but *vexation of spirit*; you shall finde great inticements, and much evill in them: besides, they will fill your hands full of much evill and bloud; that is, they will give thee no true Ioy; for what joy hath the murderer of his murder? Now the reason wherefore they cannot give true Ioy, is, because they are under the faculty of joy:

Simile.

As the eye is weary quickly with looking on a small print, but let the print be sutable unto it, then it will delight in it; so it is with the facultie of joy, if there were no wearinesse brought to it by them, then men would not be weary in the acquiring of them, but we see there is such awkwardnesse in the minds of men for the getting of them, that it wearies the minde, but satisfies it not. *Ier. 9. 23.* saith the Prophet, *Let not the*

Ier. 9. 23.

wise

wise man glory in his wisdom, nor the strong man in his strength, nor the rich man in his riches: that is, he hath no cause to glory in any outward thing, because it is the Lord that sheweth judgement, and can dissolve any creature to nothing; but if he will glory, let him glory that he knowes God: for the true knowledge of God bringeth true comfort and joy. But it is not so with the creatures, for there is no creature can bring good, or doe good or evill without God; I say, no creature can bring comfort unto a creature without God; for God, if he is the sustainer of all creatures, so likewise he is the Author of all. But if we come to spirituall comfort, God doth not communicate it unto any creature, no creature hath part of it: The creature nourisheth us not simply as it is a creature, but it becomes nourishable by reason of that which is put unto it; as the fire brings light & heat, heat is the matter of the fire, light is but a thing or quality that depends upon it; so the matter of every comfort is God, and of all things in the world, though the instruments that doe convey this comfort be a creature: therefore you may have the huske when you want the kernell; that is, you may have these outward things, and yet want the sweetnesse of them. And this is when God turnes away his face from a man in the creatures, then the comfort in the creature is gone; & therefore *David* prayed, *Turne not away thy face from thy servant*: that is, take not away my comfort. All mens comforts stand in *Gods face*: let a man be never so rich, let him have wife and children, lands and possessions, give him what outward things you will, & what joy and

All mens  
comforts  
stand in  
Gods face.

*Simile.*

Psa 62. 23.

*Vse.* 2.

and comfort is in them if Gods face be turned away? *Ahab* is rich enough, and *Haman* hath a wife and children, and yet what comfort and joy had they in them? It is not the creature that can yeeld true comfort, but it is the All-sufficiency that is in God, and from him derived unto them: As for example, take a man that is in despaire, tell him of the world, make large promises unto him in this kinde, none of all these will comfort him, they are so farre from ministring comfort, that they adde unto his sorrow, especially if his griefe be for a matter of sinne; but tell him of God, and his sufficiency, of Christ, and of Iustification, and Remission of sinnes, then he will beginne to have some joy in God: And as the presence of God is now most comfortable, so in hell the knowledge of God and his presence shall be their greatest torments. Therefore let my advice be unto you that which the Prophet *David* gives in the like case, *Psal. 62. 23. Trust not in oppression, and if riches increase, set not your hearts upon them:* that is, set them not so upon them, as to place your happinesse in them.

The Use then may serve for the just reproofe of all earthly minded men, and for exhortation unto all to leave their earthly mindednesse: Let us all therefore labour to deprive our selves of all inordinate desire of them; especially it concernes those that abound in them, to keepe a strong watch about their hearts, lest this viper lay hold upon them: for as it is a hard thing to keepe a cup that is full without spilling, so it will be a hard worke for those that have their Closets full of earthly things, not to have their hearts taken up with

with them; and therefore our Saviour saith, *It is a hard thing for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.* What is the reason of this? because it is hard to have abundance of outward things, and not to put trust in them: and what is said of riches may be said of any other outward thing whatsoever, whether it be pleasure, or honour; for these all worke the heart of a waxie disposition to evill, so as it will take any impression, it will be ready to receive into the soule any sinne, or imbrace any Object, and carry the impression of it unto action.

Now what should move us to mortifie these earthly members? The first Motive is, because if wee doe not mortifie them, the divell will ensnare us by these earthly members, though we seeme not to be within his power: As a Dogge that hath broken away from his keeper, yet going with his chaine hee will the more easily be taken: so these earthly members are as a chaine, whereby the divell layes hold on us; therefore if you would not be taken by Satan, then mortifie these earthly members.

The second Motive to move us to mortifie these earthly members is, because one earthly member, or the reigning of one sinne in us, tyes us fast from God, and bindes us fast to the devill: now what matters it whether a man betyed with one chaine, or twenty chaines, if he betyed fast; so what matters it whether he be tyed with one sinne, or many sinnes, if one keepes him from God: For as one Grace, truely wrought by the Spirit, makes a man righteous, so one raging sin makes a man unrighteous. Men thinke

M

that

Why it is hard for a rich man to be saved.

Motives to mortifie our earthly members.

I  
Simile

One reigning sinne makes a man unrighteous.

Luke 9.23.

that they may retaine some sinne, and yet be righteous; but I say, if thy heart be set upon any earthly thing, if it be but an immoderate care for these earthly things, or if it be but feare of such or such a man, which may seeme to be but a small thing, that tyes thee from God; I say, if you looke unto such a man, if a matter of Conscience come before thee, and thou dare not doe justice for feare of him, but will in this case rather breake with God, it is a signe that there is no true Grace in thee, thou art as yet earthly minded: but if thou be heavenly minded, thou wilt set thy resolution thus: **This thing I know to be just and right, it is a matter of Conscience, though all the men in the world should be angry with me, yet I will doe it.** And therefore our Saviour saith, *Except hee deny himselfe, hee cannot be my Disciple, Luk. 9.23.* that is, if hee cast off all selfe-love of these outward things, so as he will not set his heart immoderately upon them. But it is now farre otherwise with men, they will doe as other men doe: like the Planets, they will turne every way: and therefore it is impossible but Satan should catch these men, because they love to play with his bait: deceive not thy selfe, if thou forsake some, and doe not forsake all, thou art as yet not heavenly minded: For a man may not be altogether covetous, and yet not renewed: he may not gripe so fast after the world as another, and yet not be depending upon God, such an one is but an earthly minded man: so a man may be religious a while, and he may deny himselfe either some sinne, or else the company of wicked men, and yet when he comes but unto this,

that



that he must deny himselfe in all his pleasures, here he stands at a stay, Gods Grace and Salvation and he parts, he will not buy it at so deare a rate, as to lose his pleasure in these outward things.

But you will say unto me, How shall we doe to get this loathing of earthly things? Therefore, for the better helping of you unto this worke, we will now come downe to consider some meanes by which you may obtaine it.

First, if you would get a loathing of earthly things, the first meanes, is, to get a *sound Humiliation*: For what is the reason men doe so minde earthly things, and why they doe not place heavenly things before, but because they have not felt the bitterneffe of sin? Now the true ground of Humiliation, is the hating of sinne, out of love unto God: but men turne it another way, they make another ground of Humiliation.

For first, it may be they are humble because of the feare of judgement that is present, or one that is likely to ensue, but not for sin as it is displeasing to God; their heart, it may be, is broken, but it is not made better.

Secondly, it may be they are humbled because of some generall losse of outward things, or of some generall judgement that is befallen the land, or it may be a particular losse of credit, or the like, but not for any particular sinne.

Thirdly, it may be there was a deeper ground, the persons of some men that were rich, but now are fallen, and therefore because their hopes depended upon this man, and now being unable to helpe them, they are dejected. But this is a false Humiliation; for

*Object.*

*Ans.*  
Meanes to  
obtaine  
the loathing  
of  
earthly  
things.

I  
Humiliation.  
False  
grounds  
of it.

I

2

3

Wherein  
true Hu-  
miliation  
stands.

2

The roial-  
ty of spiri-  
tuall things

Heb. 11. 34

3

A constant  
and dili-  
gent watch  
over the  
heart.

true Humiliation consisteth in an abstaining from sin, because it is displeasing unto God; and a raising up of the heart by Faith in Christ to beleve the promises both of Iustification, and Remission of sinnes, and then from hence flowes a loathing of sinne.

Secondly, if you would get a loathing of earthly things, you must remember the *royaltie of the spirituall things*, what the excellency of them is; they farre surpass all the things in the world: Grace hath the greatest power in it, it is able to *quench fire*, to *stop the mouthes of Lions*, Heb. 11. 34. Now if men did but beleve that there were such a power in Grace, they would never be brought to mind earthly things: therefore labour to ground your selves in the true Knowledge of God, get good Arguments in your selves of the preciousnesse of heavenly things; for if a man be not thus grounded, but shall see greater arguments to the contrary, he will presently begin to suspect that spirituall things are not the best. Now when a Christian is thus grounded, he is able to discern things of a contrary nature; therefore bring them unto the tryall, and the more you try spirituall things by a sanctified judgement, the more excellent they will appeare; but if they be not spirituall things, the more you looke upon them, the baser they seeme to be.

Thirdly, if you would get a loathing of earthly things, then labour to keepe a constant and *diligent watch over your hearts*: for when a man sets his heart and mind upon earthly things, they will worke carelesnesse and remissnesse of better things; it so possesseth his heart with feare, that he altogether neglecteth

ſeeth ſpirituall things; it will make thee careleſſe in prayer, and other holy duties. Take heed therefore of filling thy heart with earthly things, for it will take away the relliſh of ſpirituall things; and if once the ſweetneſſe of them be gone, thou wilt make ſmall account of them; Take heed of too much pleaſure, for then you will neglect prayer in private; and take heed of abundāce of riches, for they have a drawing power in them: And here what Chriſt ſpake to the Church of *Smyrna*, *Rev. 3. 8, 9.* *I know thou art rich, &c.* may be ſaid unto you, I know you are rich, by the great labour yee take after the riches: men take much paines for the getting and keeping of earthly things, then how much more ſhould they labour to get and keepe ſpirituall things; labour to keepe your hearts in tune, labour to keepe a reliſh of ſpirituall things in your hearts, and expell whatſoever is contrary unto it: Take heed of immoderate love of riches, pleaſure, or honour; take heed that you incroach not upon the Sabbath, ſet that apart for the enriching of your ſoules. I ſpeake not this becauſe I would have you careleſſe in your places and callings, but I would have you caſt off all unneceſſary occasions and buſineſſes which you draw upon your ſelves, by reaſon whereof yee neglect better things. It now remaines that I give you ſome meanes to get heavenly-mindedneſſe.

The firſt meanes, if you would get heavenly-mindedneſſe, iſt this, You muſt labour to get *Faith*; for the more Faith thou haſt, the more thou art in heaven: Faith overcomes the world, which ſets upon us two wayes: firſt, by promiſing things that are good, ſe-

Rev. 3. 8, 9.

Meanes to get heavenly-mindedneſſe.

I

Faith.

A twofold ſhare of the world.

M 3

condly,

condly, by threatening that which is evill. Now Faith overcomes both these: For,

First, the world tels thee, that if thou wilt be earthly minded, thou shalt get respect and credit, thou shalt get an Inheritance, thou shalt be a King; but Faith tels thee, that if thou wilt be heavenly-minded, thou shalt get credit and respect with God and his Angels, and *an inheritance undefiled, immortall, which fadeth not away*; thou shalt be as a King, and a Prince here in this life, over the world, the devill, and thine owne corruptions, over all these thou shalt be more then a Conquerour, and have a Crowne of glory in the life to come.

Secondly, the world tels thee, that if thou wilt not be earthly minded, thou shalt lose thy wealth and riches, thy honour and thy credit, nay, thy life also; but Faith tels thee, that if thou beest earthly minded, thou shalt lose thy spirituall life, and riches, and shalt be poore in the graces of the Spirit; thou shalt lose honour and credit with God and his children; nay, thou shalt lose eternall life. Thus Faith overcomes our inordinate affections to the world, and makes us heavenly minded.

2  
Humility.

James 4.8

The second meanes, if you would get heavenly mindednesse, is this, You must labour for *Humilitie*: this is that which the Apostle *James* exhorts us unto, *1am. 4. 8. Cleanse your hands you sinners, and purifie your hearts you double minded: & then humble your selves, cast your selves downe, and the Lord will raise you up.* Where we may note, that before our hearts and hands can be cleansed, we must be cast downe. This we may see in the Parable

ble of the Sower, *Luk. 8. 8.* two of the sorts of ground were not fit to receive seed because they were not humbled, and therefore the Word had not that effect in them as it had in those that were humbled, plowed, and had the clods broken. It is with an humble soule, as it is with an hungry and thirsty man; tell him of gold and silver, he cares not for it, only give him meat and drinke, for that is the thing he most desires, and stands most in need of: or like a condemned man, tell him of lands and possessions, he regards them nothing at all: for nothing will satisfie him but a pardon: so it is with a Christian that is humbled and cast downe under the sense of the wrath of God for sinne: tell him of any thing in the world in the most learned and excellentest manner that possibly you can, yet nothing will satisfie him but the love and favour of God in Christ, he can relish nothing but heavenly things: nothing will quench his thirst but the imputed righteousness of Christ. Thus you see that Humility is an excellent meanes unto heavenly mindednesse.

The third meanes, if you would get heavenly mindednesse, is this, thou must labour to get thy judgement rightly informed, especially concerning earthly things: The reason wherefore men are so besotted with the world, is, because they doe not conceive of the things in the world so as indeed they are, they thinke better of them then they deserve, and looke for that from them which they cannot afford them: therefore heare what the Preacher saith of them: *Solomon* saith, that they are vanity and vexation of spirit: yea, he calls all vanity: And in another place he compares

Simile

3  
A judgement  
rightly in-  
formed  
concerning  
earthly  
things.

Eccle. 1. 14

pare them to things that are most variable, and most uncertain, as to grasse that withereth, to a shadow that is suddenly gone; this is the esteeme that the Wise-man had of earthly things. And thereby wee may see that they are not truely good, because they are uncertaine things, and promise that which they cannot performe unto us; for at the best they are but things wherein, as through a crevice, we have a small glimpse of the true good; yet they themselves are not over-good, because they are not the cause whereby the chiefe Good is produced; neither are wee able to keepe them; for at such or such a time they will be gone; so that they are neither true good, nor our good; and therefore this should weane us, and our hearts from them. But let us strive to set our affections on things that are durable good, and substantiall good, which will not deceive us: and will promise us nothing but that which it will performe farre beyond our deserts: therefore labour for a right informed judgement.

4  
A sight into  
the All-  
sufficiency  
of God.  
Gen. 17.1

The fourth meanes, if you would get heavenly mindednesse, is this, Labour to get a sight into the *All-sufficiencie of God*: Remember what the Lord said unto *Abraham, I am God All-sufficient; walke before me and be upright.* God is an All-sufficient God for generall good: things of this life are at the best but particular good: as health is a particular good against sicknesse, wealth and riches a particular good against poverty, honour and credit a particular good against disgrace: but God is a generall good, and the fountaine of all goodnesse: other things are but created, like cisternes,  
that

that good they have is put in them; therefore the Lord complains of the people, *Ier. 2. 13. They have forsaken me the fountaine of living waters, and have digged to themselves Cisterns that will hold no water;* that is, they have forsaken God the fountaine of all good, and have chosen unto themselves the creatures, that have no more good than that which comes from God, the fountaine: As a man that forsakes a fountaine that continually runnes, and betakes himselfe to a crack'd Cistern that hath no water but that which commeth from the fountaine, and is also subject to lose his water; so when men set their hearts on earthly things, they forsake God who is All-sufficient for them, and seeke to his Creatures which are insufficient and unable to helpe themselves: therefore you ought to thinke of these things, to the end you may be heavenly minded.

*Ier. 2. 13.*

The fifth meanes to get heavenly mindednesse, is this, *To Remember from whence thou art fallen, Rev. 2. 5.* this is for those that have beene heavenly minded and now are earthly minded. It is with many Christians, as it is with the shadow on the Diall, the Sonne passeth, and they know not how: or as a man going to Sea, first he loseth a sight of the Townes and houles, then the sight of the Churches and Steeples, and then he loseth the sight of the Mountaines and hills, then at last he seeth nothing but the motion of the Seas; so here are many Christians that make a godly shew of profession at first, but by degrees they fall away, till at length they become nothing; they leave the good profession, and take up an outward profession of

A remembrance from whence we are fallen.  
*Rev. 2. 5*  
*Simile.*

N

Chri-



*Simile.*

A spiritual  
Consump-  
tion com-  
pared to a  
bodily.

Such are  
fitly com-  
pared to  
Nebuchad-  
nezzars I-  
mage.

Dan. 2. 32.

Christianitie, and doe all in hypocrisie: it is with these men as it is with a man that hath a Consumption in his body; first, he growes weake; secondly, hee loseth his colour; thirdly, he loseth his relish and taste; and this is the most dangerous of all: so it is in a spirituall Consumption; first, they are weake and feeble to performe holy duties; secondly, they lose their colour, that is, their cheerefulnesse in the performance of holy duties; thirdly, which is the worst of all, they lose their relish, they cannot taste wholesome Doctrine, they delight not in the pure Word; and this is dangerous, and hard to be recovered, A Consumption at first is more easie cured than discerned; and at length it is more easily discovered than cured; so it is with the spirituall: the sicknesse and the weaknesse of the soule may at the first be more easily cured than discerned, but when they beginne to lose their colour and taste, it is more easily discerned than cured. This is a marvellous dangerous case; and therefore to prevent this sicknesse of the soule, let men remember from whence they are fallen: I can compare such Christians to nothing so fit as unto the Image of *Nebuchadnezzar*, which he saw in a vision; the head was of gold, the brest, shoulders, and armes of silver, the thighes and legges were of brasse and Iron, and the feet were of clay: so many Christians, at the first, for their zeale, knowledge, tendernesse of conscience, are as pure as gold; afterwards, they grew more cold and remisse in the performance of holy duties, than before; as also not so carefull in the keeping of a good conscience; and this is worse than the first, even as sil-

ver

ver is worse than gold; againe, they come to a degree worse than that, like brasse and Iron, dead and cold to every thing that is good; then at last they come to clay; that is, to be earthly minded, minding onely the things of the earth: and therefore if thou wouldest get heavenly mindednesse, and keepe off this spirituall Consumption of thy soule, remember from whence thou art fallen.

Having already shewed you the difference between earthly and heavenly mindednesse, and also shewed you the meanes whereby you may get out of earthly mindednesse, it now remains that we lay downe some motives to move you to this worke.

The first Motive to move all men from earthly mindednesse, is, because *heavenly things are a better object*: the desire doth not dye, but change; the affections and desires are but changed from earthly things to heavenly things: now every desire hath a conjunction with the things that they affect: if it bee but an earthly desire, it hath a conjunction with an earthly object: so if it be an heavenly desire, it hath a conjunction with an heavenly object. Now if men did but know, or at least would be perswaded of this, it would be an excellent meanes to perswade men to leave earthly mindednesse: for what is the reason that men will not professe Religion, but because they say, then wee must be crucified unto the world, and the world must be crucified unto us: that is, they must leave all their pleasure & delights. It is true, thou must be crucified unto the world, thou must leave inordinate care of earthly things, all distrusting care, which

Motives to heavenly things.

I  
Heavenly things a better object

is a companion of earthlie mindednesse in unregenerate men; now what losse will it be unto thee, if thou have heavenly affections for earthlie? Will not a man willingly part with drosse for gold? A man that is recovered of a dropsie, what if a necessitie be laid upon him to abstaine from excesse in drinking, would he not rather willingly leave his desire, than have his disease to returne? So, what if thy affections be changed from earthly to heavenly things, so as thou dost feele the burthen of immoderate cares cast off thee? What though a necessitie be laid upon thee not to entangle thy selfe with the things of this world; is it not for thy soules health to keep it from a Consumption? If men would be perswaded of the benefit that comes by this heavenlie mindednesse, and that it were but a change of the desire; not to their losse, but their great advantage, surely they would not bee so backward from getting of heavenly-mindednesse: therefore labour to perswade thy heart of the truth of this grace, for this doth not forye a man from the world that he must not have any thing to doe with it, but it orders a man in the world, it keepes him from all inordinate cares of the world, and all inordinate desires of earthly things; it sets all the faculties of the soule in order, and it sets the body in order: now if men did but know the benefit of this change, they would be more easily perswaded to leave earthlie-mindednesse.

The second Motive, to move all men to leave earthlie-mindednesse, is, because *there is no sweetnesse in these earthlie members*; there is an insufficiency in them, they cannot give any true content to the heart of a man

and

2  
No sweet-  
nesse in  
earthlie  
things.

and that they cannot doe it, this is cleare by two particulars: first, this ariseth from the mutability of the thing; Secondly, it ariseth from the disposition of the persons.

First, I say, they can give no true content unto the heart of a man or woman, because they are mutable and subject to change: now you know that all earthly things are mutable, they have a time of being, and a time of not being: let the heart of a man or woman be set upon any of these earthly things, and the losse of it will bring greater sorrow of heart, by how much more hee hath set his heart upon them: if immoderately, then the sorrow is the greater; if moderately, the sorrow is the lesse; but if he set his whole heart upon any thing, whether it be his riches or his honor, or his pleasure, the losse thereof will cause much sorrow of heart: now it is onely Grace that gives true content unto a Christian; spirituall things they change not, they are constant, immutable, and permanent, as Iustification, Remission of sinnes, and Reconciliation, these are not subiect unto any change, they cannot be lost; for when the heart is set upon heavenly things, the comfort cannot be removed, because the cause of that comfort continues. Now comfort in Christ is the true comfort of the soule, and therefore where Christ is by his Grace in the heart, there is content.

Secondly, I say, they can give no true content unto a man or woman, if we consider the condition and the disposition of the persons, and that two wayes. first, if we consider them as good men, and so belong to God; or secondly, if we consider them as bad men, and so

I  
Because  
they are  
mutable.

2  
Because of  
our condi-  
tion.

I  
Whether  
good.

not belonging unto God, wee shall see that outward things cannot yeeld any true content unto either

First, if they be good men, and so belong unto God: yet there cannot be such sweetnesse in them as to give true content unto the soule. For manytime they are a cause, or at least a meanes to draw afflictions from God upon a man: for *God is a jealous God*, that is, a God hating spirituall Idolatry. Now when the heart of a man or woman is imoderately set upon, when, I say, his heart runnes a whoring from God after earthly things, whether it be after riches, honour, or pleasure, the Lord will be sure to meet with him, and whip him home for it. As we see in *David* and *Eli*; if *David* will set his heart upon *Absalom*, the Lord will be sure to meet with his *Absalom* above all the rest: if *Eli* will not correct his sonnes, but let them dishonour the worship and service of God, God will correct them himselfe. And this arises from the nature of God: for God hath a fatherly care over his children, and therefore will not suffer them to soile themselves with the things of the world, nor their affections to be drawne away: and therefore the Apostle saith, that *he chastiseth every sonne whom he doth receive*; that is, if a man or a woman do belong unto God, they shall be sure of sorrow and affliction: and these are sent unto them to weane them from the things of this world, to purge out of their hearts that sweetnesse that they are ready to conceive in these outward things, by reason of that corruption that is in them.

2  
Wicked.

Secondly, if they be wicked men and doe not belong unto God, yet there shall be no sweetnes in them; for

for if hee bee not regenerate, outward things are not sanctified, and where they are not sanctified upon a man or a woman, no sweetnesse can be expected from them: And the reason is, because they have not peace of conscience, which proceedeth from grace. Now howsoever worldly men may seeme to the world to have true content, and to be filled with joy, yet the truth is, it is a sicke joy; for their consciences are ever accusing of them, and they are in a continuall feare that they shall lose one another: therefore the Lord will bee sure to afflict them, *Psal. 55. 19. the Lord will heare and afflict these because they have no changes, therefore they feare not God*: therefore dost thou see a wicked man prosper in the world, and is not subject to such crosses and losses as other men are, it is a foule signe that that man doth not belong unto God, but is one whom God hath appointed unto damnation: For this is the nature of earthly-mindednes, it casts out of the heart the feare of God in an unregenerate man; now where Gods feare is not, Gods grace will not help that man. But this is not usuall, for the Lord most commonly meets with them here either by afflicting or judgments upon them, or else with sudden death; but if hee do not meet with them here, it is because their judgments may be the greater, that when they have heaped up the measure of their sinne, then God will heape up the measure of their punishment, and the measure of his wrath, to presse them downe unto hell. Now what if God deferre the execution of Iudgement, it is not because there is any slacknesse in God, as if he did not regard them, but the Apostle saith, that tis his *Patience,*

The nature of  
earthly minded-  
nesse.

1 Pet. 3. 20. *ence, 1 Pet. 3. 20.* he takes notice of it, he puts it upon record, he remembers it well enough, but he is a patient God; that is, he *waits* for their conversion. Now patience is an attribute of God, and every attribute of God is God himselfe; for *there is nothing that is in God but it is God*. Patience, I say, is one of the Attributes by which God hath made himselfe knowne unto us: now when men abuse this Attribute of God, hardning himselfe from his feare, hee will certainly meet with them: what and if God do deferre long? it is not because he shall escape unpunished; for saith God, *When I begin, I will make an end*: that is, I will strike but once, they shall have no more time for repentance, they shall not abuse my patience any more. This is a fearefull Iudgement of God, when God doth proceed by prosperity to destroy them; and it was the judgment the LORD threatned against the two sonnes of *ELI*, *Hophni and Phineas*, 1 Sam. 3. 22. Thus you see there is no sweetnesse in outward things for a man to set his heart upon them.

1 Sam. 3. 22

3  
No salvation  
with  
them.

The third Motive, to move all men to leave their earthlie mindednesse, is, because if a man or woman be earthlie-minded, *they cannot be saved*: and who is there amongst us that would not willingly be saved? All men doe desire salvation, and yet there are but few that in truth do desire it, because their practice of life is not answerable to such a desire; for the Apostle saith, *He that hath this hope, purgeth himselfe*; that is, he will take spirituall Physicke, the grace of the Spirit, which will throughly purge out this earth'ie mindednesse, or at leastwise keepe it under, that it shall not be able



able to beare dominion in his heart. Now I say, there is a necessitie laid upon every man to be heavenly-minded; for so our Saviour saith, *Mat. 6. 24. No man can serve two Masters, hee cannot serve God and Mammon*, that is, he cannot serve God with one part of his soule, and the world with another, you cannot be earthly-minded, and heavenly minded; God will have all the soule or none, God will admit of no Co-partnership, he will not be a sharer with the world of that which is his right. Againe, two contraries in nature cannot stand together; now there is nothing so contrary as God and the world: and therefore the Apostle saith, *If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him*: that is, if he set the world in the first place, he cannot keepe the love of God, God and his grace will depart from that man; It is a thing contrary to nature to serve two masters, men cannot beare it, for there can be but part-serving; and surely it is not so contrary to a man, as it is contrarie unto God; therefore it is the folly of men that thinke they may retaine their earthly mindednesse, and yet serve God too; but it is impossible to joyn these two in any action, and yet be acceptable to God: Faith is that which is the ornament of every action; *Whatsoever is not of faith, is sinne*: now every earthly minded man, is a faithlesse man; it keepes Faith out of the soule, whether it be love of riches, or honour, or pleasure, though it be but depending on the approbation of such or such a man, it will keepe Faith out of the soule; so saith our Saviour, *Ioh. 5. 44. How can you beleeve, seeing ye seeke honour one of another, and not the honour that cometh of*

*Mat. 6. 24.*

God will have all the soule or none.

O

God?

Luk. 9. 23.  
Christ's  
two marks  
of a true  
Christian.

God? The cause that they wanted Faith, was, because they preferred the approbation of men, and sought that before the gifts and graces of God; for it is impossible you should beleve, so long as you retaine any affection of vaine-glorie. *Luk. 9. 23.* our Saviour gives two markes of a true Christian; the one is, to *deny himselfe*; and the other is, to *take up the Crosse*; therefore it is not only required that a man deny himselfe the pleasures and profits of the world, and all inordinate affections, but he must also take up the crosse, he must be willing to suffer for Christ, reproach, disdain, and shame; for there is as great a necessitie laid upon him to suffer, as to deny himselfe: and thinke, thinke not your selves heavenly minded, except you finde in you a heart willing to suffer for Christ.

4  
It is the  
best part to  
doe so. 5

The fourth Moive to move all men to forsake earthly mindednesse, is, because *it is the better part*, and every man would have the best part; but it is a hard matter to perswade men that that is the best part, for they say they have felt sweetnesse in them, and therefore now to perswade them, is to fight against reason; which is hard to be evinced without manifest prooffe: First then, we will prove it by Authoritie: Secondly, we will prove it by Reason.

Proved by

I  
Authority.

Luke 10.

41, 42.

opened.

A four-  
fold difference  
betweene  
earthly and  
heavenly  
things.

First, I say, we will prove heavenly mindednesse to be the better part by Authoritie or Scripture: as *Luk. 10. 41, 42.* where in the storie of *Martha and Mary*, our Saviour makes a four-fold difference betweene earthly and heavenly things; first, Christ saith to *Martha*, *Martha thou carest and art troubled*; that is, there is much care and trouble both to get and keepe earthly things,

things, these cannot be gotten without great labour, it is a part of that curse which God laid upon *Adam*, that *in the sweat of his browes he should eate his bread*; that is, he should finde much difficultie and labour to get outward necessities for the sustaining of nature: *Mary* shee sat downe, shee was at rest, which shewes us thus much, that it is an easie labour, and an easie worke to seeke after grace: Indeed it is no labour at all, if wee compare it with the earthly labour; the one is the delight of the soule, but the other is the burthen of the soule: now that which is the onely delight of the soule, is grace, and therefore what the bodie doth to satisfie the soule in this, it accounts of it as no labour to it selfe, for it yeelds willing obedience to the soule: now where there is a willingnesse in any man to doe a thing for another, the performance of the thing is not accounted as a labour to him, but as a delight, because he is willing; but earthly mindednesse is a burthen to the soule, because it is compelled by the unregenerate part to yeeld obedience unto it: therefore you see that heavenly things are the best part, because it is an easie worke.

Gen. 3. 17.

Secondly, *Martha* is troubled about *many things*; that is, there are many things required to make an earthly minded man perfect, to make him such an one as he would be: if he have riches, then he must have honour, and pleasure, and a thousand things more, and yet never come unto that which he would be: it may be he is rich, but he wants honour, it may be he is honorable, but he wants riches; or it may be he hath both, but he wants his pleasure; he enjoyes something,

2

but he wants that which he would enjoy. But *Mary* hath chosen but *one thing*, and that is Christ, this satisfies her, but shee hath not him alone, but with him shee hath Grace, Iustification, and Remission of sinnes; one spirituall grace with Christ makes a Christian happy, he needs not to labour for any other: if Christ be in the heart, he will draw all grace with him into the heart: and therefore the Apostle saith, *Hee that gave us Christ, will with him give us all things else*: that is, all grace that we shall stand in need of:

3 Thirdly, *Martha* was troubled, but about *earthly* imployments, things of little moment in comparison of grace: but *Maries* was for the *one thing needfull*: namely, grace and holinesse, and therefore Christ called it the best part: and indeed what comparison is there betweene earthly things and grace.

4 Fourthly, *Martha's* part is but of *corruptible* things, subject to change: they were mutable, there was no solidnesse in them: but *Maries part shall never be taken away from her*. Now with men, that which will endure the longest, is alwies esteemed the best: *Maries* shall never be taken away: which implies that *Martha's* was nothing so, because it was set in opposition against it. Thus you see how Christ judges of them, and therefore if you will beleve Christ, spirituall things are the best part. Again, *Luk 16 8, 9, 10, 11*. there are foure differences set downe betweene earthly things and heavenly things, whereby Christ proves that heavenly things are the best part. First, they make us unrighteous, and therefore they are called *unrighteous Mammon*, *vers. 8*. they draw the affections away from

Luk. 16. 8.  
&c. opened

from God, and then a man becomes unrighteous ; but that which makes us truly righteous, is Grace ; so then it cannot be denied but that is the best part that makes us the best. Secondly, they are the least part ; *Hee that is faithfull in the least, is faithfull also in much ;* that is, all outward things are lesse than Grace, though they were never so great ; a little Faith, a little Sanctification is better than a whole kingdome without this. *Paul* reckons all his outward privileges but dung, in comparison of Grace, *Phil. 3. 8, 9.* which he would not have done if they had not beene the better part. Thirdly, they make us unjust ; he that is *unjust in the least, is also unjust in much ;* that is, he that sets his heart upon earthly things, it will so draw his heart from God, that he will make no conscience of right or wrong : now that which bindes the conscience is certainly the worst part. Fourthly, it makes us unfaithfull : *If you have beene faithfull in a little* wicked riches, how will you be faithfull in the true riches ? that is, he that is earthly minded God cannot trust with any Grace : for earthly mindednesse takes away the fidelitie of the creature : now where there is no true Faith, there can be no true repose in that man : A man without Faith, is like a house without a solid foundation, no body dares trust to it : neither will God trust an earthly minded man with Grace. Thus you see it proved by Scripture, that heavenly things are the best part. Now we will prove it by Reason that it is the better part.

The first Reason is, because Christ in the places before-named proved it to be the best part, therefore if

2  
Reas. 1.

O 3

you

2 you will beleeve Christ on his Word, heavenly things are the best part. The second Reason is, because they make us the sons of God, and consequently, the heires of Salvation; *Wee are* (saith the Apostle) *the sonnes of God by Faith in Iesus*: but the other makes us the children of the devil: And the third Reason, is, because he rewardeth heavenly mindednesse with Salvation, but the other he doth not reward.

5  
All things  
are at Gods  
disposing.

Psal. 31. 15.

The fifth Motive to move all men to forsake earthly mindednesse, (if none of all these before spoken of will move thee, yet let this move thee) is this, because *all things are at Gods disposing*: hee it is (as the Wise-man saith) that *gives riches and honour, poverty and want*; all things are of God, there is nothing in earth, but it is first in heaven: as the Ecclipse of the Sunne is first in Heaven, and then in the Water and Land; so there is nothing that comes to passe in the World, but it was in Heaven before all eternity, This David confesseth, *Psal. 31. 15. They have laid a snare for mee, but my times are in thy hands*: that is, they have laid a trappe to take away my life from me, but it was first decreed in Heaven with thee what they should doe to me, all things come from God, whether they be good things or bad, whether they come immediately from God, as Life, Health, Ioy, Salvation, or the like: or whether they come mediately by other meanes, as friends, wealth, pleasure, sicknesse, sorrow, or the like: when thou art sad, who can comfort thee if God will not? when thou art sicke, who can heale thee? when thou art going to hell who can save thee? art thou weake, who can strengthen thee?

art

art thou poore, who can enrich thee? *Preferment* (saith David) comes neither from the East, nor from the West, but from God that sheweth mercy: Art thou in favour with a great man, Who promoted thee? art thou in honour, Who exalted thee? Perhaps thou wilt say, it was my parents, or this friend, or that man; no, it was first decreed in heaven, or else it had never been. This made David say, *Psal. 6.8. The terrors of life and death are in thy power, or doe belong unto thee;* that is, nothing hath any power to doe any good or hurt, but as God wils it; I say, good or hurt is of God: *What evill is in the City, and the Lord hath not done it?* that is, what evill is committed and is not first permitted by God to be done. The blessing of the creature (as we call it) is of God: Doth the Lord send any creature to hurt thee? the creature hath no power to doe it, except the Lord command him: As for example; You know an axe is a sharpe instrument, which with helpe will doe much hurt, yet let it alone and it will doe no hurt at all: but let a hand be put to it, and presently you may doe much with it: so the creature hath no power to hurt thee, except they joyne with them Gods command: and this we call the evill of the creature. Againe, doth the Lord send any creature to comfort thee? it is not because the creature can comfort thee, the creature hath not any such power in it selfe, but the Lord useth it as an instrument for thy good. *Matth. 4.4. Man liveth not by bread only, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God:* that is, Bread, although it be a good Creature, yet it hath no power to nourish thee, except the Lord put power unto it, and command

Psal. 6.3.

Simile.



mand it to nourish thee. Now seeing all things are of God, and this heavenle-mindednesse is a meanes to bring a blessing upon all the rest, that is, to blesse them for thy good; be heavenly minded: This was the encouragement the Lord gave unto *Abraham*, *Feare not, for I am thy exceeding great reward, walke uprightly with me*: so if thou wouldest have a rich reward, Salvation, and everlasting Life, then get heavenly-mindednesse.

But you will say unto me, it is true, we were once earthly minded, but now we are heavenly minded; I am now another man to that I was, therefore that you may not deceive your selves to thinke that you are heavenly minded when you are not, I will give you some markes whereby upon examination you may know whether you have left your earthly-mindednesse or no.

Markes to know whether we have lost our earthly mindednesse.

Marke I

The first signe wherby you shall know whether you be earthly minded or no, is, by examining your selves whether your delight in earthly things be immoderate, or an excessive care; examine whether your hearts are so set upon them, that it deprives you of all spirituall Ioy, if you doe, you are as yet earthly minded.

I

First, if you exceed in the matter of getting of them, and then in the matter of keeping of them; when you make them the chiefe end of your desire, and preferre your owne profit in the getting or keeping of them before Gods glory, this is to make them your God: yet I say not but it is lawfull to use things for an end; as Recreation, for this end, to fit our bodies for the performance of better things, this is as it were to take physicke for health-sake: but when men will

will make them their end, nay, let the creature in the place of God, which is spirituall whoredome. And this is when men will scrape riches together, so much for this child, and so much for that childe; so much for this use, and so much for that use, in this thou seekest thine own ends; but if thou wilt get them, get them for the right end, that is, Gods glo.y, and not thine end to satisfie thy lusts, let them be all at Gods disposing: and remember, *Luk. 16.* what became of the rich mans end, and the end of all his ends. I speake not this as if none but unregenerate men were troubled with immoderate cares; for many times the dearest of Gods children have excessive cares for earthly things, and many times doe exceed their bounds, but yet it is not constant but by fits and away. Therefore try, is thy excessive care constant? it is a manifest sign that thou art earthly-minded, thou art not as yet crucified unto the world: *1 Tim. 6.9, 10.* The Apostle saith, *They that would be rich, pierce themselves thorow with many sorrowes*: that is, they slay themselves, they are their owne greatest enemies: and *2 Pet. 2. 12.* Saint Peter calls them *naturall bruit beasts*, led with sensualitie, because when men set their hearts and affections upon earthly things, they are deprived of naturall reason: now the reason, we know, is that which makes the difference betwixt reasonable and unreasonable creatures, and therefore when men come to lose their understandings, then they become bruit beasts, and then no marvell if they have beastly affections, and be led away with sensualitie, to a satisfying of their lusts, being mad to be taken in giving way unto their lusts, and

1 Tim. 6.9.

10.

2 Pet. 2.12.

2  
Recreation when  
lawfull,

insnaring themselves with those pleasures wherein they be delighted, and so make themselves a prey unto Satan.

Secondly, you shall know it if you exceed in your pleasure and recreations, as gaming, and bowling, and sporti g; grant they be lawfull, yet if they be used excessively, it is a note of earthly-mindednesse. Recreation should be but as a stone to whet the Faith when it is dull, a meanes to sharpen the faculties, that they may be the fitter to do the functions of the body and soule, but when it is used excessively, it becomes a hurt and hinderance unto it; when men will make a trade of Recreation, and spend their time in it from day to day, and so make it their vocation; this is a wicked thing, and this is folly in yong men, who because they have meanes, therefore thinke that it is not unlawfull to spend their time in gaming, and the like; but they are deceived, for the Lord exempts them from no calling that I know of; sure I am, idlenesse, and gaming, and other recreations are no calling for them: And what is the reason that young Students will not set themselves to their Studies, but because they have wholly devoted themselves unto ther Recreations. And therefore examine your selves in these two, so likewise for all other in the like kinde, and accordingly judge of your selves whether you be heavenly minded or no.

Mark 2.

The second signe whereby you may know whether you be heavenly minded or no, is, by the esteeme that you have of heavenly things, whether you esteeme them as a part of your selves: every facultie or habit hath

hath an object, if thou be a carnall man, then these earthly things are that which delights thy soule, but if thou be heavenly-minded, then spirituall things are the delight of thy soule. Now touch a man that is not regenerate in these outward things, and you touch his life, for he accounts his life as them, for they are part of himselfe; but it is otherwise with the spirituall man, he accounts not of these earthly things: *2 Cor. 4.5.* the Apostle saith, *Wee preach not our selves*: that is, we account not of the approbation of men, nor any outward thing, as a part of our selves; therefore if we want these, we doe not much care. Hereby then examine your selves what are the things you most delight in? What, are they earthly things, how to be rich or honourable? Doth this take away all your time, and employ all the faculties of your soules, that you can have no time to thinke upon God; or at least if you doe, yet it is very remissely and overly, with no zeale or affection? Then certainly as yet thou art not heavenly-minded: But if thou be enlightned by the Spirit it will be farre otherwise with thee; these earthly things will have but the second roome in thy heart, all thy care principally will be how to get grace, justification, remission of finnes, and reconciliation. Now if it bee thus with thee, it is an excellent signe that thou art heavenly-minded; when thou canst say with *Paul, Rom. 7. 17.* *It is not I, but sinne in me*: that is, the lustings and rebellions which are in my heart after these earthly things, have not the first place in my heart: *It is not I*, that is, it is the unregenerate part, which I account not as part of my selfe; if (I say) it

Rom. 7.17.

be thus with thee, it is a signe that thou art heavenly minded: for if thou hast obtained this heavenly mindednesse, thou wilt be disposed like a Traveller, who will ever be enquiring the way home, and whether all at home be well: if he can meet with any that can thus certifie him, and hee heare that they are all well at home, then hee will the more chearefully undergoe any difficultie that he shall meet withall in the way; will undergoe stormes and tempests, hunger and cold: in like manner it is with the heavenly minded man, he will ever be asking the way home, (for indeed heaven is our proper home) and whether all be well at home; that is, if God, and Christ, and the Spirit, and the Saints be at amitie with him: and in himselfe he will be inquiring if he find faith, and repentance, and peace of Conscience, if hee feeles that for matter of Iustification and Remission of sinnes he be well, he respects not the world, he cares not much what he meets withall, whether reproch and shame, penury or want, so he find no lacke of spirituall grace, all is well with him. Therefore examine your selves whether you be heavenly minded or no by the esteeme that you have of earthly members.

Mark 3.

The third signe whereby you may examine your selves whether you be earthlie-minded or no, is, by your spirituall taste, whether you relish heavenly or earthlie things best: and therefore the Apostle saith, *Rom. 8. 5. They that are of the flesh doe savour the things of the flesh, but they that are of the spirit the things of the spirit*; that is, if the heart be regenerate it will taste a sweetnesse in nothing but in heavenly things, or at least

least nothing will be so sweet unto him; and on the contrary, they that are earthlie-minded, they can find no sweetnesse in heavenly things. Now (as I said before) every facultie or habit hath an object in which it is delighted, whether it be unto good or unto evill, so that if the heart be regenerate, then it will finde sweetnesse in nothing but spirituall things, but if it be unregenerate, then it can finde no sweetnesse in heavenly things; neither can it wish them so well as earthly things. Therefore examine what you delight in, what delight you have of the hearing of the pure Word, whether you relish it then best when it comes in the *plaine evidence of the Spirit*, or when it is mixt with eloquence and wit; which if you do, it is a signe of earthlie-mindednesse. It is said, *2 Pet. 2. 1. As new borne Babes desire the sincere milke of the Word*: that is, the man that is truly regenerate and renewed, he doth best relish the Word when it is alone without any mixture, and therefore hee calls it the *sincere milke*; that is, the pure Word: As if he should say, It is pure of it selfe, but if there be any thing added unto it, or mixed with it, it detracts from the excellencie of it; for indeed the Word is the purest thing in the world: all Arts, and Sciences, and knowledge of Philosophie are good for morall duties, but they are corrupt and uncleane in comparison of the Word; and the reason is, because these are the works of men; now there is no worke of man but it is subject to corruption, but the Word of God remaines pure: therefore examine your selves how you stand affected with the pure Word.

*Object. 1.*  
Eloquence  
no orna-  
ment to  
the Word.

But some will say unto me, that Eloquence and wit is an ornament unto the *Word*, it sets forth the excellencie of the *Word* the more; therefore if it bee such an ornament unto the *Word*, then it ought to be used; otherwayes the excellencie of the *Word* will not appeare.

*Ans. 1.*

The super-  
excellencie  
of the  
Word.

To this I answer, That humane Wit and Eloquence is so farre from setting forth the excellencie of the *Word*, as it obscures the excellencie of it: I say, there is no Art, Science, Tongue, Knowledge or Eloquence in the world that hath such excellencie in them as the *Word* hath, whether you respect the Author, God; or the Indicter, the holy Spirit; or the matter of it, *Christ* and his righteousnesse. Again, the stile the Spirit uses in setting downe the phrases of the Scripture, shewes plainly that it is excellent of it selfe: now if any thing be added unto a thing that is excellent, either the thing must be as excellent, or else it detracts from the excellency of it; but there is no man but will confesse that the *Word* is the most excellent thing in the world, therefore it must follow, that Eloquence addes not to the excellency of the *Word*.

*Object. 2.*

*Ans. 2.*  
The Word  
should not  
bee mixt  
with Elo-  
quence.  
2 Cor. 4. 5.

But you will say unto mee, May wee not use Eloquence and Science in the preaching of the *Word*?

To this I answer, That it is an unreasonable thing, I say, a thing not seemely, that the *Word* bee mixt with humane Eloquence; for the pure *Word* should be purely delivered: and the Apostle saith, 2 Cor. 4. 5. *I preach not my selfe unto you: that is, I sought not mine owne praise by using Eloquence of words, but I Preach the Word purely, without any mixture of any*



any thing with it : againe, he saith, 2 Cor. 1. 17. *When I came among you, I came not in the enticing words of mans wisaome, lest the Crosse of Christ should be of none effect :* that is, I came not with words more for shew than for substance; he calls the preaching of the Word that hath any thing mixed with it, whether Wit or Eloquence, but *enticing words*, such words as doe rather feed the humour, than worke upon the Conscience of a man. Now a man is said to be *entised*, when he is drawn away from that which is good, unto that which is either evill absolutely, or else not so good as that from which he is drawne : and the truth is, he that useth Eloquence in the Preaching of the Word, doth nothing else but draw the heart away from affecting the pure Word, unto that which hath no vertue in it to save. Again, he Preach'd not with enticing words, *lest the Crosse of Christ should be of none effect :* that is, if I should Preach my selfe in mixing any thing with the Word, that would take away the power of the Word, the Word would not be effectually to worke grace in the heart; therefore I dare not Preach after this manner lest I should deprive the Church of the power of the Word, for if it want power to work, it will also want power to save : therefore the Apostle saith, 1 Cor. 10. 4. *The weapons of our warfare are not carnall, but mightie through God, &c.* that is, the weapons by which we slay our corruptions and lusts, are *not carnall*; that is to say, are not eloquence of speech, or any humane art, but *are mightie through God*; that is, by God there is a secret power given unto his Word, whereby it over-mastereth the lusts in the heart, and worketh in it a new kinde of qualitie.

1 Cor. 1. 17  
opened.

What  
meant by  
enticing  
words.

But

Object. 3

But you will say unto me, What must we doe with our learning? or what must we not learne Sciences, or must we shew no learning in preaching?

Answ. 3.

How learning and eloquence is to be used in preaching the Word.

To this I answer, It is true, that we had need to use all the Arts, Sciences, and knowledges, that we can, and all will be little enough; for as the Apostle saith, *Who is sufficient for these things?* that is, who hath the knowledge of Arts, or Learning, or eloquence, sufficiently to preach the Word: but yet wee must take heed that wee doe not bring them unto the Word as wee finde them, neither in them to shew our selves, but onely make them as a meanes to helpe us for this work: As for example; The Children of *Israel* might whet their sithes upon all the stones of the *Philistims*: so a Minister may sharpen his faculties with Arts. A man that keepes Sheepe, hee feeds them with hay, not because hee looks that they should bring forth hay, but Lambes and Wooll; even so, let a man use these Arts and Sciences, yet not to bring forth Eloquence, but to make us more able to preach the pure Word. It is good therefore that wee take heed that we doe not eclipse the excellency of the Word by these: Wee know, apparell though it be laid in pure gold, yet so much as is covered of it, detracts from the excellencie of it, therefore it were better that it were alone: so it is with the Word, though the Word may seeme to be gilded with Eloquence or Philosophie, yet it were better that it were alone, for so much of it as is covered with these, so much of the excellencie of the Word is hid.

Simile.

Simile.

Object. 4

But you will say unto me, that we use Eloquence and

and the like, that men may the better conceive us, and that our Ministry may the better be respected; for we finde this kinde of Teaching most pleaserh them, and which most men affect, therefore if we shall not use such and such phrases of Eloquence, wee shall be little respected amongst them.

To this I answer, that every Minister is, or should be a Physician; now we know that the part of a wise Physician is not to satisfie the humour of his Patient, for so he may encrease the disease, but to labour to cure him by ministring such Physicke unto him, as he knowes by experience the necessity of the disease requireth. even so, o hum our men in Preaching, is not the way to cure them, or to change the evill disposition of their nature, but rather a meanes to encrease their disease, and to make them obstinate and rebellious against the Word, when it shall come home unto them: For what is the reason that the Word is so opposed, when it is preached (as the Apostle saith) *by the evidence of the Spirit and in power*, but because it crosseth their corruptions? It comes not in the same manner that it was wont to doe: therefore the best way should be to preach in the Spirit, that is, to apply the pure Word of God unto the Consciences of men, and so to purge out the sicknesse of the soule before it grow incurable. There is a disease that many women have at their stomackes, whereby they desire to eate ashes, and other things, which poisons nature; now if they bee not cured of it by purging out the humours that lye there, but be satisfied in it, it will at last destroy them: so it will be with these men; to

Q

satisfie

*Ans<sup>r</sup>. 4.*  
Ministers  
should not  
please their  
people with  
eloquence.

*Simile*

satisfie them in this sicknesse of the soule, is not the way to cure them, but to make them more incurable : therefore let Ministers looke that they preach the pure Word, and nothing but the pure Word : and let men examine themselves whether they be heavenly minded or no, by their tasting and relishing of the Word when it is preached purely without any mixture, or else when it is mixed with eloquence.

Marke 4

The fourth signe whereby you may examine your selves whether you be heavenly minded or no, is, to try the opinion and judgement you have of heavenly things, how you conceive of spirituall things. *Rom. 12.2.* The Apostle saith, *And bee renewed in the spirit of your minds, that you may know what that good, and holy, and acceptable will of God in Christ is :* Hee that is heavenlie minded hath a new judgement given unto him whereby he is able to see spirituallie all things in another manner than he did before : I say not that he saw them not at all before, but he saw them not in that manner that he doth now, for *he is renewed in the spirit of his minde*, saith *S. Paul* : he hath a change wrought in his heart and understanding, whereby he is able to know and to doe the will of God in a more surable manner than before : he hath a new light in his soule, whereby he is able to know *what the will of God in Christ is* : that is, he knowes what God doth require to be done by him for Christ, not carnally by a bare understanding, but spirituall by the worke of the Spirit, and therefore saith *Paul*, *2 Cor. 5.16.* *Henceforth know wee no man after the flesh : yea, though we have knowne Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know wee him*

2 Cor. 5.16

*him no more*: that is, wee knew him before in a carnall manner, as he is a man, or as he was a man amongst us, but now we know him in another manner, as he is our Saviour, and our Redeemer, Christ my Saviour and my Reconciliation to the Father.

Now it is not a bare knowledgethat I speake of, such a knowledge as is attained unto by Learning and Art, for so a man may have knowledge, and yet not be heavenly minded; but that knowledge I speake of, is a knowledge that is wrought by the Spirit; when it hath changed the heart, then he is able to judge both of Persons and Things.

What  
knowledge  
is wrought  
by the  
Spirit.

First, for *Persons*; he is able to judge of the persons of men, and accordingly to make a difference betweene men: if he see a poore man that is a sound Christian, though he be contemned in the eyes of the world, yet if it appeare to him that he hath Grace in his heart, or if he make an outward profession of love to God, he doth highly esteeme of him because of Grace; on the contrary, if he see a great man, though in great honor and esteeme with men, yet he respects him not if he want grace: therefore examine yourselves whether you are able to distinguish of persons in this kind.

I  
Persons.

Secondly, for *Things*, he is able to judge of things whether they be spirituall or earthly; he is able now to know what is truth, and to embrace it; and what is error, and to refuse it; he hath now a Touch stone in himselfe; that is, he hath the Spirit of discerning, whereby he makes triall of Graces, and laies hold on those which will endure the touch, those he will receive as spirituall; the other which will not, he casts

2  
Things.

our as counterfeit : therefore the Apostle saith, *1 Cor. 2. 9. The eye hath not seene, nor the eare heard, neither have entered into heart of man, the things that God hath prepared for them that love him* : that is, he was not able to judge of things in that manner as now he can. Therefore examine your selves whether there be a new life put into you, whereby you are able to judge of Persons and things in another manner than you did before.

*Object.*

But you will say unto mee, How shall I know that my heart is renewed by the Spirit, and that there is a new life put into me ?

*Ansiv.*

To know whether the heart be renewed by the Spirit.

I  
By his affections.

To this I answer, that you shall know whether your heart is renewed by the Spirit, by these three things : first, by thy affections : secondly, by thy speeches : and thirdly, by thy actions.

First, I say, thou shalt know it by thy *Affections* ; for by these thou maist know whether thou bee heavenly minded or no : and that thou maist not doubt of it, our Saviour gives the same marke of a renewed heart, *Matth. 6. 21. Where your treasure is, there will your hearts be also* : you may know that where your heart is, there is your treasure ; what your heart is set upon, here your affections are ; for the proper seat of love, is the heart. Now if the heart be renewed and regenerated by the Spirit, there will be a love of spiritual things, and this love will beget heavenly affections. A man may certainly know what estate he is in, whether he be regenerate or no by his affections, how he is affected, what love he beares unto heavenly things ; for there is life in affections, and as a man that lives knowes that he lives, so a man that hath

hath spirituall love in his heart towards God, cannot but certainly know it, except it be in time of temptation, and then it may be he may not finde that love of God in his heart; but this sence of the want of the love of God is but for a time, it continues not; therefore the holy Ghost when he would describe a heavenly minded man, he describes him by his affections, as the best marke to try him by; as *Abraham* would command his servants to serve God; and *Nehemiah* feared God; and *David*, *Psal.* 112. 1. delighted greatly in the Commandements of God: now wherefore did they obey God, and feare God, and delight in the Commandements of God, but because of that inward love they bare unto him. We know every man can tell whether he loves such a man or such a thing, or whether he hates such a man or such a thing by the affection he beares to them; in like manner, a man may know whether he be heavenly or earthly minded by the affections he carries towards the things he affects: therefore examine your selves, what are the things that you love most, that you thinke upon most, that you take care of most, that you take most care to get and to keepe, are they earthly or heavenly things? those things you doe love best, and your affections are most set upon, that your thoughts are most troubled with all; if they be earthly, you may justly feare your estates; for the affections flow from love, and therefore if you did not love them, you would not set your hearts and affections upon them.

Secondly, you shall know whether your hearts be renewed by your *Speeches*: now this may seeme but a

Q 3

slender

Psal. 112. 1.

2  
By his  
speeches.



Mat. 12. 34

slender signe of a renewed heart : because it is hard to judge aright by outward appearances, to know the sinceritie of the heart by the speeches : yet seeing Christ makes it a signe of a renewed heart, I may the more safely follow him : our Saviour saith, *Matth 12. 34. that out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh ;* that is, there is abundance in the heart either of good or evil : Now if the heart be full of heavenly-mindednesse ; if, I say, this abundance that is in the heart be grace, then it will appeare in the speeches ; for the speeches doe naturally flow from the affections that are in the heart ; but if the abundance that is in the heart be evil, then the heart cannot but send out foule speeches and rotten communication ; and therefore our Saviour saith, *A good tree cannot bring forth evill fruit, nor an evill tree good fruit : it is impossible that a heart which doth abound, and is full of earthly mindednesse, but it will brake forth and appeare by his speeches : the filthinesse that is in his heart, if it have not vent, it will burst ; as we know a new vessell that hath Wine put into it, must have a vent or else it will burst : and by the even you may know what wine it is : so, the speeches are the vent of the heart, and by them you may see what is in the heart : if grace be there, the speeches will favour of it, as a Caske will taste of that which is in it.*

*Simile.*

*Object.* But you will say, The heart is of a great depth, and who can search it ? who is able to know whether the heart be renewed or no, by the speeches ?

*Ans.* To this I answer, I say not that a man may at all times, and in all places, judge of it aright : but I say, that

that a man may certainlie know himselfe whether he be renewed or no; which is the thing we seek to prove in this place; that a man may know from what root they spring, whether of weaknesse, by rebellion, or naturally through unmortified lusts: I say not but sometimes a child of God, a regenerated man may have foule speeches in his mouth, and yet his heart be good towards God; he may have rotten talke, but it is but for a time, it will not continue, and it will cause much sorrow of heart, if he have grace, when his conscience touches him for it. *2 Tim. 2. 20, 21. In a great mans house there are vessels of honour, and vessels of dishonour; if a man therefore purge himselfe, he shall be a vessell of honour, and yet have corruption in him, there may corrupt communication come out of his mouth, and yet he keepe his goodnesse; as a vessell of gold may be foule within, and yet cease not to be gold, a vessell of honour, neither loose its excellencie; so a regenerate man may have in the abundance of his heart, some chaffe as well as wheat, some corruption as well as grace, and yet be a vessell of gold: that is, heavenly-minded: for the Apostle saith, If any man therefore purge himselfe, he shall be a vessell of honour, notwithstanding his corruption in his heart, & it appeare in his speech: yet if he purge himselfe, if he labour to mortifie them, if he labour to rid his heart of them, he shall be a vessell of honour.*

1 Tim. 2. 10  
21. opened.

But you will say, It may be that we shall not have alwaies occasions to try men by their speeches, how then shall we know whether their hearts be renewed?

To this I answer, It is true, that it may so fall out that

Object. 2.

Answer. 2.

we

we cannot try them by there speeches, yet silence will declare in part what is in the heart; let a regenerate man be silent, and his silence will shew that he hath a renewed heart; if he be reproached or slandered, his patience in suffering shews the uprightness of his heart; but if yee speake, it hath a greater force, and will more manifestly appeare: so on the contrary, the rottenness that is in the heart, will appeare in impatience of spirit.

3  
By his  
actions.

Thirdly, you may know whether your hearts be renewed by your actions: this also our Saviour makes another signe of a renewed heart, *Math. 7. 20. By their workes you shall know them*; that is, by their actions. Now every thing is knowne by his actions; therefore examine your selves what are your actions, are they the actions of the regenerate part, or of the unregenerate parte; are they holy actions, or are they uncleane actions? by this you may know whether you be heavenly-minded or no. Now this must necessarily follow the other two: for if the heart be renewed, then there will be heavenly affections in it towards God, and spirituall things, and if heavenly affections, then there will be heavenly speeches; for these flow from heavenly affections; and if there be these two, then there must needs be holy actions: therefore our Saviour saith, *Luk. 6. 45. A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth good fruit*; that is, if the heart have in it a treasure of heavenly affections, and speeches, it cannot be but it will send forth good actions in the life.

Marke 5

The fift and last signe whereby you may examine  
your

your selves, whether you be heavenly-minded or no, is, by examining your selves how you stand affected towards him that seeks to take these earthly members from you; how you stand affected with him that reproves you for your earthly-mindednes. This is a sign that *Paul* gives of an unsound heart, *2 Tim. 4. 3. The time will come that they will not endure wholesome doctrine*: that is, they will not endure the word of reproofe, but will be ready to revile them that shall reprove them: and therefore he addes, *that they shall heape to themselves Teachers*; they shall affect those that shall speake so as they would have them. Now this is a signe of earthly mindednesse, when they are offended with him that shall reprove them for their sinne; for if men reckon these members as a part of themselves, then you cannot touch them but you must touch their lives, for these are a part of their life; and if you seeke to take these away, you seeke to take away their lives: now what man will be contented to part with his life? It is a principle in nature that God hath implanted in every creature, to love their lives; but if you account them not as a part of your selves, but as your enemies, then you will account him as a spirituall fiend that shall helpe you to slay them; for who is there that will not love him that shall help him to slay his enemy? Therefore if the heart be heavenly disposed, he reckons them as his enemies; but if he be renewed, he accounts them as a part of himselfe: therefore examine your selves by this, whether you be heavenly-minded or no.

The Use of this that hath beene spoken, is for exhortation unto all those that are heavenly minded:

R

Let

2 Tim. 4. 3.

vse.

Rev. 22. 11.

Simile.

The least  
sinnes to  
be avoided.

Let mee now exhort such to persevere in heavenly-mindednesse, let them labour to grow every day more heavenly-minded than another, *Rev. 22. 11. Let them that be holy, be holy still*: that is, let them be more holy, let them labour to grow in heavenlie-mindednesse, let them labour to keepe their hearts pure from this earthly-mindednesse, because it will soile their soules: for all fiane is of a soiling nature; if it enter into the heart, it will leave a spot behind it: now wee know that if a man have a rich garment which hee sets much by, he will bee marvellous carefull to keepe all kinde of grease and spots out of it; so it should bee a Christians duty to labour to keepe all soile out of his soule, because it is a precious garment, and the residing place of the Spirit: we know that if a man have one spot in his garment, it makes him out of love with it, and then cares not how many lights upon it; so it is with sinne, if thou suffer thy heart to bee spotted but with one sinne it will worke carelesnesse in thee, so that hereafter thou wilt not much care what sinne thou commit, nor how thy soule is soiled: therefore it behoves you to keepe your hearts from every sinne, and to make Conscience of little sinnes. And so much the rather, because the glory of God is engaged on your conversation; if thou shalt soile thy selfe with any sinne, that hath taken upon thee the profession of the Gospell, God will bee dishonoured, and the Gospell will bee scandled: Again, keep thy heart, because God takes speciall notice of all thy actions; as for dogs and swine, as for the actions of unregenerate men, hee regards them not, because his glory is not engaged upon their con-

converſation, he expects nothing from them; but as for you, he takes a particular notice of all your actions ſpeeches, and behaviours; and therefore you ſhould bee marvellous carefull over your hearts. Againe, looke unto ſecret ſinnes, becauſe he is the ſearcher of the heart; let the feare of God ſet in order every facultie of your ſoules to keepe out every ſinne, every evill thought, becauſe he takes ſpeciall notice of it. And that I may the better prevaile with you, I will briefly lay downe ſome Motives to move you to keep this diligent warch over your hearts.

The fiſt Motive to move every Chriſtian to continue and grow in heavenly-mindedneſſe, is this, becauſe *by this meanes he may be able to doe every good work.* 2 Tim. 3. 21. *If a man therefore purge himſelfe, he ſhall be a veſſell of honour, fit for every good worke:* that is, if he labour to rid his heart of earthly-mindedneſſe, he ſhall have a new life put into him, whereby he ſhall be able to performe holy duties in another manner than before. Now what is the reaſon that there is ſuch complaint among Chriſtians that they cannot pray, and are ſo dull and ſluggiſh in the performance of holy duties, but becauſe they have not rid their hearts of earthly-mindedneſſe? What is the reaſon that there is ſo much Preaching, and ſo little praſtiſe; and ſo much hearing, and ſo little edifying; but becauſe men are earthly-minded? If they would purge themſelves of this earthly-mindedneſſe, it is unpoſſible but that there would be more ſpiritual life in them, in the performance of ſpiritual duties. Therefore if it were for no other cauſe but this, that you may be inabled unto

Secret ſins  
to be look-  
ed into.

Motives to  
keep watch  
over our  
hearts.

I

every good worke and holy duty, and that you may keepe in you your spiri uall life, feeling and moving, labour to keep thy heart cleane from sin.

2

The second Motive to move Christians to grow in heavenly mindednes, is, because that by *this*, *God is honoured*; I say it is a glory to God if thou keep thy heart cleane: Now what man is there that would not willingly glorifie God, who stucke not to give Christ for him? It is a glory unto God when the Professors of the Word live a holy life; for what is the nature of the Word but to cleane? now when it worketh not this effect in them, or at least when it appeares not in them, it doth detract from the excellency of the Word. The Apostle layes downe the nature of a true Christian, *Iam. 1. 21. Pure Religion is this, to keep ones selfe unspotted of the world*; that is, a spotlesse life is that which best be- seemes a Christian man that takes upon him the p o- fession of the Gospel, and that which brings much glo- ry unto God is a blamelesse conversation: and to this end the Apostle exhorts, *Let* (saith he) *your conversati- on be without covetousnes*, *Heb. 13. 5.* as if he should say, an unsatiabie desire doth detract from the glory of God: therefore let this move men to be heavenly minded.

Iam. 1. 21.

Heb. 13. 5.

3

The third Motive to move every Christian to grow in heavenly mindednes, is, because *he may prevaile with God in prayer*: *Iam. 5. 16.* the Apostle saith, that *The pray- er of a faithfull man availeth much, if it be fervent*: that is, it hath a great force with God for a blessing: Now this should be a marvellous encouragement to keepe the heart cleane, in regard of the great necessitie that the Church hath of our prayers; and therefore if wee would

Iam. 5. 16.



would not for our selves prev. ile with God, yet in regard of the great need that the Church stands in at this present we should be moved to doe this dutie.

But you will say, that we are but few, or that I am but one, and how can we be able to prev. ile thus with God ?

*Object.*

To this I answer, Grant that you be but a few. yet a few may doe much good ; *Ezek. 22. 30.* speaking of the destruction of *Ierusalem*, I sought, saith the Lord, for a man to stand in the gap, and there was none : He speakes there in the singular number, if there had bin but *one* ; that is, but a few, they might have prevailed much with God : so I say unto you, though we be but a few, yet if wee keepe our hearts pure, we may doe much with God ; nay, though thou be but a particular person, thou maist prev. ile much with God ; as *Moses* did for the Children of *Israel* : when a damme is new broken, the casting in of a little dirt will hinder the course of water, but if it be not holpen in time, it will not easily be stoppt ; so in time a few may prevent a Iudgement ; nay, such a Iudgement as otherwise may destroy a whole Land ; if the heart be truly sanctified, it hath a great force with God : Again, a man that would pray, if he doe not speake, but many times he is forced to send forth sighes and grones unto God, this is of great power with God ; but if he powre out his heart in voyce, it hath a greater force : and therefore the Wise-man saith, that *the words of the righteous are precious* ; that is, of great worth with God : and therefore let this move men to bee heavenly-minded.

*Ansiv.*  
*Ezek. 23 30*



## HOW TO MORTIFY FORNICATION.

COLOSSIANS 3. 5.

*Mortifie therefore your members which are upon the earth, fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousnesse, which is Idolatrie.*

**H**AVING handled in generall the Doctrine of Mortification, according to the Method of the Apostle, I am now come to descend to the considering of particulars, as they are laid downe in my Text; and would speak of them in the order as they are ranked by the holy Spirit, but that the affinity and neere nesse betwixt three of these sins, namely, Fornication, Uncleanness, and evil concupiscence, makes me to confound them, and promiscuously to mingle them together. Let us therefore consider first of the nature of every of these sins particularly

larly by themselves, and afterward make some use and application to our selves of them altogether.

The Doctrine that arises in generall from these words, is, That

Doctr.

*All Vncleannesse is a thing God would have mortified and quite destroyed out of the hearts that hee would dwell in.*

All filthinesse and uncleannesse is a member of the old man; now in such as Christ dwells in, the old man is crucified, he is dead with Christ; now he that is dead with him, is freed from him: and againe, hee that is in the second *Adam*, hath power to mortifie the members of the old man. All Gods children must be purified and cleansed from all pollution, as the Apostle expressly commands us, *Eph. 5.1. Be ye followers of God as deare children: that is, be ye like unto God your Father, as children resemble their naturall fathers; now God is pure and holy, therefore must ye be so also: and then it followes, Verse 3. But Fornication, and all Vncleannesse, or Covetousnesse, let it not be once named amongst you, as becommeth Saints: that is, let all such filthinesse bee so farre from you, as never any mention bee made of it amongst you; if it should by chance enter into your thoughts, bee sure to kill it there, let it not come no farther, never to the naming of it: As it becommeth Saints; that is, holy ones, Gods children and peculiar people, it were unbecomming, and a great shame to them to be uncleane, to be unlike God their Father, who is holy. In like manner, he exhorts us to cleanse our selves from all filthinesse of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holines in the feare of God, 2 Cor. 7.1.*

that

Ephes. 5.1.

that is, Let us purifie our hearts from the corruption of lust and concupiscence which is therein, striving to make perfect our hol nesse in the feare of the Lord: and so more fully also in 1 *Thes.* 4. 3, 4, 5. he sets down the particular uncleannesses should be obtained from, and mentions two of the very same spoken of in my Text: namely, Fornication, and lust of concupiscence: the words are (for they are worthy your marking) *This is the will of God, even your sanctification, that you should abstaine from Fornication: that every one of you should know how to possesse his vessell in sanctification and honour, not in the lusts of concupiscence, &c.* and therefore we ought to mortifie and destroy all the filthines that is in our hearts, if we would be accounted Gods children, and have his Spirit to dwell in us.

But that for the generall: we come to Particulars, and will speake of the first sinne that is named in the Text, Fornication: whence the point of Doctrine is this, That

*Doct. 2.*

*Fornication is one of the sinnes that are to bee mortified.*

Fornication what a grievous sinne.

*Pro. 2. 17.*

Fornication is a sin betweene two single persons, and in that it differs from Adultery: and although it be not altogether so hainous as Adultery, becaule by it the Covenant of GOD is not violated as by the other spoken of *Prov. 2. 17.* neither finde we the punishment absolutely to bee death, yet it is a grievous sinne, and to bee feared, in that it subjects those men that are guilty of it, to the Curse of God and damnation: for the Apostle saith, 1 *Cor. 6. 9.* *No Fornicator shall enter into the Kingdome of Heaven; It deprives*

*2 Cor. 6. 9.*

prives a man of happinesse, banishes him out of Gods Kingdome into the dominion of the Devill, and territories of hell, never to be exempted from the intolerable torments of Gods eternall vengeance. But to lay open the hainousnesse of this sinne, we will consider these foure Things:

First, the Sinfulnesse  
 Secondly, the Punishment  
 Thirdly, the Danger.  
 Fourthly, the Deceitfulnesse

} of it.

First, the *sinfulnesse* of this sinne of Fornication appeares first in great contrariety that it hath with Gods Spirit, more than all other sinnes. Betwixt Gods Spirit and every sinne, there is a certaine contrariety and repugnancy, as in nature we know there is betwixt heate and cold; now in all contraries an intense degree is more repugnant than a remisse, as an intense heat is more contrary than a heat in a lesse degree; so it is with Gods Spirit and this sinne, they are contrary in an intense degree, and therefore most repugnant unto; for the Spirit delights in holinesse, and this sinne in nothing but filthinesse; that is pure and undefiled, but this hath a great deformity in it, and therefore consequently must needs be odious in his eyes. Besides, this is contrary to our calling, as the Apostle saith, *1 Thes. 4. 7. For God hath not called us unto uncleannesse, but unto holinesse.*

Againe, it causes a great elongation from God, it makes a strangenesse betweene God and us; all sinne is an aversion from God, it turnes a man quite away from him, but this sinne more than any other, it is

S

more

I  
 The sinful-  
 nesse of  
 Fornicati-  
 on.

1 Thes. 4. 7.

2

more delighted in, we have a greater delight in the acting of this sinne than in any other, and therefore it is a most grievous siane.

Furthermore, the grea.nesse of this sinne appeares, in that it is commonly a punishment of other sinnes; according to that of the Apostle, *Rom. 1. 21. and 24.* compared together, where he saith, *Because that when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankesfull, but became vaine in their imaginations, &c. wherefore God also gave them up to uncleannesse, through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies betweene themselves.* To the same purpose is that of the Preacher, *Eccles. 7. 26.* where speaking of the enticing Woman, whose heart is snares and nets, &c. he saith, *Who so pleaseth God shall escape from her, but the sinner shall bee taken by her: that is, whosoever committeth sinne shall in this be punished, that he shall be entraped and ensnared by the subtille enticements of the dishonest Woman.* So also *Prov. 22. 14.* *The Mouth of strange women is a deepe pit, he that is abhorred of the Lord shall fall therein:* Now all sin of this kind, and consequently sinners; are abhorred of the Lord, and therefore he will punish them in letting them tumble into this deepe pit of strange women here, and hereafter without repentance into the bottomlesse pit of everlasting destruction: As long as the Lord looks for any fruit of any man, hee keepes him from this pit: but such as notwithstanding all his watering, pruning and dressing, will bring forth no fruit, with those the Lord is angry, they shall fall into it. Now as in a ladder, or any thing that hath steps to ascend and descend by,

Rom. 1. 21,  
24.

Eccles. 7. 26.

Prov. 22. 14.

by, that stayre unto which another leads, must needs be higher than the rest; so in sin, that sinne unto which other lead, as to a punishment, must needs be greater, and of an higher nature than the other: and therefore this sinne is a most grievous sin.

Besides the hainousnesse of this sinne appeares, because it layes waste the Conscience more than other sinne, it quite breakes the peace thereof; nay, it smotheres and quenches Grace. The Schoolmen call other sinnes, *hebetudinem sensus*, a dulling of the senses; but this an extinction of Grace: other sinnes blunt Grace, and takes off the edge, but this doth as it were quite extinguish it: It makes a gap in the heart, so that good cattell, good thoughts, and the motions of the Spirit may runne out, and evill cattell, noysome lusts, and corrupt cogitations may enter in, to possesse and dwell there, and therefore it is a grievous sinne.

Lastly, the greatnesse of this sinne appeares, because it delights the body more than any other sinne doth; and therefore the Apostle in 1 Cor. 6. draweth most of his arguments, to dissuade the Corinthians from the sinne of Fornication, from the glory and honour of our bodies; as that *the body is not for Fornication, but for the Lord, Ver. 13.* And that *our bodies are members of Christ, Ver. 15.* *The Temples of the Holy Ghost, Ver. 19.* *Are bought with a price, Ver. 20.* and then concludes, *Therefore glorifie God in your bodies:* and so in another place it is said, *We ought to possesse our vessels in honour:* Now there can be no greater meanes to dishonour the vessels of our bodies, than to pollute them by this filthy sinne of Fornication.



The punishment  
of Fornication.

Secondly, the hainousnesse of this sinne will bee the better seene if wee consider the fearefull punishment of it, which because men are more afraid of the evill of punishment than of the evill of sinne, is therefore set down to be the greater according to the greatness of the sin it selfe: as may appear by these two Reasons:

Heb. 13. 4.

First, God Himselfe takes the punishment hereof into his own hand; for so saith the Apostle, *Heb. 13. 4. Whoremongers and Adulterers God will judge:* that God Himselfe will be the Iudge of all men, for the godly indeed it shall be best, because he is righteous and will render to them a Crowne; but for the wicked, *It is a fearefull thing to fall into the hands of the living God.*

2  
1 Pet. 2. 9,  
10.

Againe, God reserves such filthy persons for an heavey judgment, according to that of *Peter, 2 Pet. 2. 9, 10. The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of Temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished; but chiefly them that walke in the lust of uncleannesse.* And this is manifest in that fearefull and grievous judgment hee brought upon the Children of Israel in the wilderness, when as there fell in one day three and twenty thousand for the committing of this sinne, *1 Cor. 10. 8.* So God punished *Ruben* for his sinne, in that hereby he lost his *Excellency*, *Gen. 49. 4.* and by losing this he lost three things which belonged to his birth-right as hee was the eldest: First, the kingdome, which was given to *Judah*: Secondly, the Priest-hood, which *Levi* had. Thirdly, the double portion, which his Father bestowed on *Ioseph.*

*Ioseph*. Further, *Sicchem* and *Ammon* also for their filthinesse in this kinde were taken away suddenly: And how was *David* punished, though the deare Child of God, *the sword shall never depart from thy house, &c.* See also what grievous judgements the Lord threatens to them that shall commit this sinne, *Prov. 5. 8, 9, 10, 11.* Remove thy way farre from her, (meaning the strange woman, or Harlot) and come not nigh the doore of her house; lest thou give thine honour unto others, and thy yeares unto the cruell; Lest strangers be filled with thy wealth, and thy labours bee in the house of a stranger; and thou mourne at the last, when thy flesh and thy body is consumed, &c. So againe, *Pro. 6. 33.* Who so committeth adultery destroyeth his owne soule: and *Prov. 5. 5.* Her feet goe down to death, her steps take hold on hell: as who should say, there is no escaping death but by shunning her, if not death temporall, yet surely death eternall: nay, if this will not fright you, there is no escaping betweene hell and her. Besides, as in that which is good, the more a man delights, the more comfort it will bring him; according to that in *Prov. 3. 4.* Let not mercy and truth forsake thee, so shalt thou find favour and good understanding in the sight of God and Man: so on the contrary, those sins wherein a man most delights, bring greatest punishment unto him, as you may see in the punishment of *Babylon*, *Rev. 18. 7.* where it is said, *How much she hath glorified her selfe and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her.* Thus then yee see the grievousnesse of the punishment proves the sinne it selfe to be more haynous and fearefull.

*Pro. 5. 8, 9,  
10, 11.*

*Pro. 6. 33.  
5, 5.*

*Pro. 3. 4.*

*Revel. 18. 7.*

3  
The danger of for-  
nication.  
Pro. 23. 27.

Prov. 2. 19.

Eccles. 7. 26.

Neh. 13. 26.

Simile.

Thirdly, the hainousnesse of this sinne will appeare, if we consider the danger thereof, and difficultie to get ou, when wee are once fallen into it. The Wise-man saith, *Prov. 23. 27. A whore is a deepe ditch, and a strange woman is a narrow pit.* Now as it is almost impossible for a man in a deepe ditch, or a narrow pit to get out without some helpe from another; so is it altogether impossible for one that is fallen into this sinne of Fornication, to free himselfe from it, without the speciall assistance of Gods grace helping him thereto: and therefore it is said, *Prov. 2. 19. None that goe unto her returne againe, neither take they hold of the paths of life:* therefore also is, *Eccles. 7. 26. her heart's said to bee snares and nets,* in respect of the entanglements wherewith shee entrappeth her followers; and her *hands to be as bands,* in respect of the difficultie to get loosed from. This sinne befotted *Salomon*, the wisest amongst men, *Nevertheless even him did outlandish women cause to sinne, Neh. 13. 26.* So also did it bewitch *Sampson*, the strongest amongst men, one that was consecrated and set apart as holy unto God, even he was overcome hereby, as we may reade, *Judg. 16.* We know by experience, as a man that is tumbling from the top of an hill, there is no staying for him till he come unto the bottome; so he that hath once ventured upon this deepe pit, and beginnes to slide into it, there is no staying of him till he bee utterly lost in the bottome thereof: or as a man in a quicksand, the more hee stirres, the faster hee stickes in, and sinkes deeper; so it is with him that is once overtaken with this filthy sinne, the more hee stirres in

in it, the faster hee stickes, and harder will it bee for him to get out. Therefore wee conclude this sinne is a most fearefull sinne, and hard to bee overcome, or left off, if once accustomed to the delight thereof.

Fourthly, the hainousnesse of this sinne will bee discovered, if wee consider the deceitfulnesse of it: it will so pewitch us, that wee will hardly bee perswaded that it is a sinne; now if wee will not believe it to be a sinne, much lesse will we bee brought to leave the sweetnesse of it, to forsake the pleasure wee finde in it. Besides, the Devill, that old Serpent, hee comes and tells it is either no sinne at all, or else but a small sinne, and may bee easily left; wee may turne from it when wee pleale; and so he dandles us till wee grow to such an height, as wee become insensible and hardned in it. Here therefore I will lay downe the deceits that Satan useth to beguile us in this sin, which being detected, we may the easier shunne and avoyd this detestable and bewitching uncleannesse.

The first deceit wherewith Satan useth to beguile us, is, *Hope of Repentance*; wee thinke wee can repent when wee list, that, that is in our owne power, for God will upon any of our prayers be heard of us; heaven-gate will be open at first knocke; and therefore I'll commit this sinne to day, and to morrow betake my selfe to my prayers, and all shall be well. But beware of this, lest you be deceived, God will not be mocked; if you will sinne to day, perhaps you shall not live to repent till to morrow; or suppose thou  
do st

4  
The deceit-  
fulnesse of  
fornication

Deceits of  
the Devill  
discovered.

*Deceit 1.*  
Hope of  
Repent-  
tance.

Deut. 29. 19.

doſt live, yet he that is unfit to day, will be more unfit to morrow: God cannot endure a man that will fall into the ſame ſinne againe and againe, for he ſtiles it, *Deut. 29. 19. adding drunkenneſſe to thirſt*; that is, never leave drinking till wee be a thirſt againe: that which ſhould extinguiſh and abate our thirſt, is made the meanes to increaſe and enflame it. Now what puniſhment followes ſuch as do ſo, you read in the next verſe, and 'tis a fearefull puniſhment; *The Lord will not ſpare him, and then the anger of the Lord and his jealousie ſhall ſmoke againſt that man, and all the curſes that are written in this booke ſhall lye upon him, and the Lord ſhall blot out his name from under heaven*: who is there among you that would not be terrified at this ſentence? Surely his heart is of Adamant, nothing can pierce it, if this doth not: 'tis a fearefull thing to fall into the hands of the living God: Beware then of doing thus, goe not on in ſinne upon hope to repent at your pleaſure, leſt before you thinke it time for your pleaſure to do it in, the hand of the Lord be ſtretched out upon thee, and his jealousie ſmoke againſt thee, or one of (if not all) his curſes light upon thee. A man would take it ill if his neighbour ſhould wrong him to day, and as ſoone as he had done aſke pardon, and yet wrong him againe the next day in the ſame kinde, and then aſke pardon againe, and ſo the third, and fourth, and forward; even ſo it is with God, wee fall into this ſinne to day, and perhaps at night begge pardon of him, yet to morrow commit the ſame ſinne over againe, as if wee had aſked leave to ſinne the freer; take heed of this, doe not bleſſe thy ſelfe in  
thy

thy heart, saying, I shall have peace, or I shall repent when I list, for feare least God presently blot out thy name from under heaven.

Againe, Hope of after-repentance doth lead many men on to the commission of this sinne; they hope they may repent before death, it is a great while till this come, therefore time enough to doe this in. But this God hath threatned, you heard even now in the place above mentioned, I pray consider of it. *Balaam* his desire was but to dye the death of the righteous, therefore hee perished among Gods enemies; he desired it, and whilest he remained onely desiring, without any labour to live the life of the righteous, God justly punished him with an utter overthrow: as he did with those, *Esay 28.15.* who said, *Wee have made a covenant with death, and with hell are wee at agreement; when the overflowing scourge shall passe through, it shall not come unto us:* These men thought all sure, nothing could come to hurt them, they are as well as any man; for they had an agreement with hell and death, neither should the scourge meddle with them: but these were but their own thoughts, they reckoned without their host, as we use to say; for see what God saith to them, *verse 18. Your Covenant with death shall bee disannulled, and your agreement with hell shall not stand; when the overflowing scourge shall passe through, then yee shall bee trodden downe by it:* They might contrive, but he will dispose: though they did this ke all well, and hope for peace and quietnesse, yet he would disannull their covenant, and break off their agreement, so that the over-flowing scourge, that is, sudden de-

T

struction

struction should take hold of them, and utterly confound them. *Ammon* going to his brother *Abſalom's* feaſt, little thought to have **beene** ſo ſoone cut off; *Sichem* preparing himſelfe for a wife, never thought of a funerall; neither is it likely that *Korah* and his company thought their tent-dores ſhould be their graves; I warrant you they hop'd for repentance, yet this ſudden deſtruction tooke away all poſſibility of repenting from them. God threatneth ſuch, *Ezek. 24. 13.* *Be-  
cauſe I have purged thee and thou waſt not purged, thou ſhalt  
not be purged from thy filthineſſe any more, till I have cau-  
ſed my fury to reſt upon thee.* And indeed we cannot re-  
pent unleſſe God ſends his Spirit into our hearts, and  
he will not ſend his Spirit into ſuch a heart as hath  
filthineſſe in it: Will any man put liquor into a glaſſe  
where Toads and Spiders are? much leſſe will Gods  
Spirit come into a heart that is uncleane.

Ephe. 4. 19.

Befides, ſuch a man as is not purged from his un-  
cleanneſſe, of himſelfe is moſt indiſpoſed to repen-  
tance; he is without feeling, as it is *Ephes. 4. 19.* *Who  
being paſt feeling, have given themſelves over unto laſcivi-  
ouſneſſe, to worke all uncleanneſſe with greedineſſe:* Now  
ſuch a man as hath no ſenſe of his miſery, that cannot  
feeble his wretched condition, but is inſenſible of his  
corruption, he can never repent; for as the Apoſtle  
ſaith, *2 Pet. 2. 14.* *he cannot ceaſe from ſinne:* and where  
there is no leaving off, and forſaking to ſinne, there  
can never be any true repentance.

Laſtly, God refuseth ſuch a man, he will not en-  
dure to heare him if hee ſhould begge repentance at  
his hands; and the reaſon is, becauſe he cannot begge  
it



it in sinceritie; for true repentance argues a turning from, and loathing of all sinne: and therefore such a purpose as men use to have in the time of extremitie, while the crosse is on them, that they will forsake sinne, that they will not doe such and such a thing, this I say, will not serve the turne, it is not sufficient; though they should mourne and seeme to repent, yet God will not accept it, for the very beasts may doe as much; as it is said, *Therefore shall the Land mourne, and every one that dwelleth therein shall languish, with the beasts of the field, and with the fowles of heaven, &c. Hos. 4. 3.*

The second Deceit, wherewithall Satan useth to deceive men, is, *Present impunitie*: he labours to perswade us, because wee are not presently punished, therefore God sees it not, or will not punish it at all, and therefore will goe on in our sinne, and delight to wallow still in our pollutions, according to that of the Preacher, *Eccles. 8. 11. Because sentence against an evil worke is not executed speedily, therefore the hearts of the sonnes of men is fully set in them to doe evil.* Against this deceit of Satan, to prevent it, lest wee should be overtaken thereby, let us remember these following considerations:

Consider first, that though execution be not presently done, yet punishments are every where threatened, and Gods threatening is as good as payment; his Word is sure, and one title of it shall not fall to the ground unfulfilled: and when God begins to punish, he will make an end; as it is said, *1 Sam. 3. 12. In that day I will performe against Eli, all things which I have spoken concerning his house; when I begin, I will also make*

*Deceit 2*  
Present  
impunitie.

*Eccle. 8. 11.*

I

*1 Sam. 3. 12.*

*an end*: If he strike once, he need not to strike any more, his blowes are sure, when he striks, he never misses, his arrowes kill at first shooting.

- 2 Consider secondly, that either a sudden judgement shall overtake them, and so confound them in an instant, or if it be delayed, then the feare it should light upon them, quite takes away the sweetnesse of the sin they commit, and so makes the sinne it selfe a vexation and punishment to them; or else lastly, if God suffers them to run on in sin securely, and without all feare or remorse, he beares with them but that he may make his power knowne and eminent by bringing a great judgement on them at the last: as the Apostle saith, *Rom. 9. 22. What if God willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power knowne, indured with much long-suffering, the vessels of wrath fitted for destruction.* There is a time, that the wicked must be fitting, and be a preparing for their destruction; which once come, let them be sure afterwards God will manifest his power, will compensate his much long suffering with the greatnesse of the judgement hee brings on them: Now, it is a fearefull thing, and a dangerous case, when God suffers a man thus to grow and thrive in his sinne, that so his judgement may be the greater.

Rom. 9. 22.

- 3 Consider thirdly, but such go on in their sin which hope to escape; because they are not presently punished, they abuse the patience and long-suffering of God. Now, the manifestation of Gods wrath, is his Name, and who so abuse them, take his Name in vaine; and you know, *God will not hold him guiltlesse that taketh his Name in vaine.* Let such then as thus abuse

buse the patience of God, thinke not that they shall escape the judgement of God, but remember to take into consideration that place of the Apostle, *Rom. 2. 4. 5. 6.* where it is said, *Despisest thou, O man, the riches of his goodnesse, and forbearance, and long suffering, not knowing that the goodnesse of God leadeth thee to repentance? But after thy hardnesse and impenitent heart, treasurest up unto thy selfe wrath, against the day of wrath, and revelation of the righteous judgement of God; who will render unto every man according to his deeds.* He shall assuredly pay for every day and houre that he shall continue in his sinne; God takes account of every minute, and will when he begins to render vengeance, repay it to the utmost farthing; every moment addes one drop unto the vials of his wrath, and when that is full, it shall be poured out upon them. See this in the Church of *Thyatira*: *Rev. 2. 21. 22.* *I gave her space to repent of her fornication, and shee repented not; Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit Adultery with her, into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds: Because shee did not repent while shee had time, therefore shee shall have great tribulation: Let us consider then the fearfulnesse of despising Gods patience and long suffering, and not thinke our selves in a good condition, because we goe unpunished, but rather let his long suffering and goodnesse lead us to repentance, while he gives us space to repent in.*

The third Deceit, whereby Satan beguiles men, is, *present sweetnesse in sinne*, the delight we take in the acting of this sin: there is a kinde of bewitching pleasure in it, that steales away our hearts from holinesse

*Rom. 2. 4.  
5. 6.*

*Rev. 2. 21.  
22. 1*

*Deceit 3  
Present  
sweetnesse  
in sinne.*

and puritie, to defile them with filthinesse & uncleannesse; for if we give never so little way to the pleasure and sweetnesse thereof, it will bring us presently to the acting of it. But for answer unto this, and to prevent being besotted with this delight and sweetnesse in sinne, take notice of the insuing considerations.

I

First, he that denies himselfe in this sweetnesse and delight, shall not loose thereby, he shall be nothing prejudiced thereby, but shall finde a greater sweetnesse, and a far more excellent kinde, a sweetnesse in the remission of his sinnes, and reconciliation unto Iesus Christ, a sweetnesse in the being freed and eased in the burden of his sinnes and corruptions.

*Object.*

But some man here will be ready to say, It is not so easie a thing to restraints ones lusts; it is a matter of great difficultie and consequence, and of more paines and trouble than you speake of; why then doe you bid us deny our selves in the sweetnesse of sinne.

*Answer.*

To this I answer; Indeed it is true, it is hard at first to be overcome and brought in subjection, yet in an heart that is truly humbled, it may be mortified; and if it once cometo that, then it will be easie to moderate it, and bring it under our command.

2

Mat. 8. 18.

Secondly, consider what Christ saith, *Mat. 8. 18. It is better for thee to enter into life halt and maimed, rather than having two hands, or two feet, to bee cast into everlasting fire:* And indeed, how much better were it for us, if we would cut off this right hand, or right eye of delight and pleasure in sinne, and cast it from us, that so wee might goe to heaven, than having pleasure here in this life for a season, to be cast into everlasting fire,

to

to have our part and portion with the Devill and his Angels, which wee shall be sure to have, if we forsake not this filthy sinne of lust and uncleannesse; for the Apostle saith it often, and that peremptorily without exception, in many of his Epistles, that *No Adulterer, Whoremonger, Fornicator, or uncleane person, &c. shall enter into the Kingdome of God.*

Thirdly, consider the more sweetnesse and delight wee take in this sinne, the greater anguish and torment wee shall finde in the renewing of our hearts, and the more difficult it will be for us to leave it: Besides, it is a dangerous thing to take our sweetnesse fully, for then perhaps wee may be so besotted therewith, as we shall hardly relish any thing else, especially the contrary vertue, which will seeme very bitter and distastfull unto us. And therefore let us be perswaded not to adhere too much to the sweetnesse and delight that wee finde present in the acting of this sinne, lest we become so bewitched with it, as we never be able to forsake it.

The fourth Deceit, which Satan useth to beguile man withall, is *the falsenesse of the common opinion of most men, and cunning delusion of our carnall reason*, unto which it seemes either no sin at all, or else so little as it need not any great adoe be made about it: Most men thinke of this sin fornication but a trick of youth, whose blood heated with intemperance, must have something to allay its lust on. Now these two be incompetent iudges, both common opinion, and carnall reason, and are altogether unfit to judge of the notoriousnesse of this sin, but let us bring it to the ballance of the Sanctuary,

3

*Deceit 4*  
The falsenesse of common opinion and carnall reason.

etuary, and then wee shall see the Iudge weigh of it, wee shall see it in its proper filthinesse and native ugliness. No man that is guilty of it can descerne its depravitie for the very conscience is defiled by it: now the Conscience is, as it were, the very glasse of the soule, and if the glasse be defiled, how can we see the spots in the soule? and if these be not to be discovered, then nothing is left whereby to judge aright of it; and therefore we must needs be deceived in the perceiving the filthinesse and hainousnesse thereof. Let us therefore betake our selves to the Scripture, which will shew it truly in its proper colours, and then if we use the meanes, God will assuredly send his Spirit to enlighten us. When *Judas* had but a glimpse of this light opened unto him, how great thinke yee seemed that sinne to him, which before he durst commit boldly for thirty pieces of silver, yet now it drives him to desperation, and present hanging himselfe. We must pray therefore for the Spirit to enlighten us, that so wee may see the filthinesse of this sin, and be no more deceived by it, as if it were either but a small sinne, or hardly any at all, as many men thinke, and our carnall reason would perswade us unto.

*Deceit 5*  
Hope of  
secrecie.

The fift and last Deceit, whereby our cunning adversary, the Devill, labours to beguile us withall, is, *Hope of secrecie*: Men commit this in private, no spectators, no secretaries shall be intrusted therewith, the innermost closets, and most retired roomes, are the places destinated for this worke, and the time commonly, is the most obscure and blackest season, the night; and indeed not unfitly, for it is a deed of darkness. yet,

yet, let all such as bee guilty hereof, let them lay to heart these following considerations:

Consider first, though they bee never so private and secret in it, yet God sees it; they cannot shut out his eyes, though they may the light of the Sunne; hee knowes it, and then it shall bee revealed: that which is said of Almes, *Mat. 6. 4.* may very truly be said of this; *Thy Father which seeth in secret, himselfe shall reward thee openly*: so, God that seeth thy secret Adultery or Fornication, hee will reward it, hee will punish it openly. See it for example in *Dauids* Adultery with *Bathsheba*, *2 Sam. 12. 10, 11, 12.* there the Lord saith, *Because thou hast despised mee, and hast taken the Wife of Uriah the Hittite, to bee thy Wife; Behold, I will raise up evil against thee out of thine owne house, and I will take thy Wives before thine eyes, and give them unto thy neighbour, and hee shall lye with thy Wives in the sight of the Sunne; for thou diddest it secretly, but I will doe this thing before all Israel, and before the Sunne.* See the Iustice of God in punishing; because *David* did it secretly, and used all manner of meanes to conceale it, as making *Uriah* drunke, and then sending him to his Wife to lye with her, that so it might bee hidden, yet God withheld him from her, and so brought it about, that *David* had no way to cover his sinne; therefore also because *David* laboured to keepe it close and secret from all men, hee will make his punishment publike and manifest to all Israel: Againe, God saith, *Because thou hast despised mee, &c.* whence observe, in this secret committing of sinne, a man doth despise God in a more speciall manner; for hee feares more the sight of men, than

I

Mat. 6. 4.

1 Sam. 2.  
10, 11, 12.



1 Sam. 2.  
30.

the sight of God, in that hee labours to conceale and hide it from the eyes of men, but cares not though God looke on, as if hee either would say nothing, or regarded not at all his sinne: but God hath said, *I them that honour me I will honour; and they that despise me, shall belighly esteemed*; that is, they shall be de p fed.

2

Consider secondly, the divers and manifold waies God hath to reveale it, though men bee never so close and secret, and use all possible meanes to hide their sinne, as faire outward civility, a seeming to hate such a filthy notorious wickednesse, or any thing else an hypocriticall heart can invent, yet God hath sundry wyes to detect their filthinesse, and lay open their hypocrisie: As first, by sensible things, when there is no person neere to see it, yet the very birds and beasts have revealed it: secondly, hee gives them up to a reprobate sense; and then in the end, though they have long lyen in it unseene and unsuspected, at last they becom shamelesse, and so ly open to every mans discovery: thirdly, he can make any man living to reveale his owne sinne, as wee see in *Judas*, though all the time hee was working his wickednesse, he had carried the businesse close enough, yet in the conclusion when hee had brought the businesse to passe, and in all probability it being now finished, should never bee concealed, even then hee must confesse it, hee must tell it every body: in like manner, it will be our case, though wee keepe our filthinesse never so private, yet God can make us in the end, on our death-beds confesse it, though all our life before we have hidden it.

Consider thirdly, whosoever commits this filthy sinne

sinne of Fornication, makes him selfe a vile, and base person; what ever hee was before, though never so glorious, yet now he is but as a *Starre fallen to the earth*, as it is in the Revelation. If a man be godly, come what will come, there is nothing can make him base, nothing can obscure him; though hell it selfe should labour to cast a darkenesse about him, yet it shall be but as a foyle upon a Jewell, or a Cloud about the Sunne, make him shine brighter and brighter: Wee know a Torchlight in a darke night, will shine brighter than if it were at noone day; even so a godly man, what ever happens unto him, what ever night of afflictions, crosses, or other disasters come upon him, yet hee will be the more illustrious, the more clearer will hee shine in the midst thereof; and the more crosses happen unto him, the more will his glory appeare: but on the other side, let a man be ungodly, what ever outward glory or pompe hee may have, yet he is but a base and vile person, and so hee shall ever be esteemed of, even at the last, doe all the world what they can. Seethis in *Paul*, who before he was converted, whilest he was a persecutor, was accounted a pestilent fellow; but now after conversion, when hee became godly, hee was highly esteemed as a chosen Vessell of the Lord: So on the contrary, the Scribes and Pharises were the onely men, who but they among the Iewes, yet now how odious is their names? they stinke in all mens nostrils. Therefore let us have a care how wee suffer our selves to lye in sinne, lest wee become in like manner hated of every man; and on the other side, let us get our selves to be godly, and then our names shall be as

*Simile.*

precious Ointment, that sends forth a sweet savour into every bodies nostrils. And thus much for the Deceits whereby Satan deceives men; wee will now come to some Vses.

Vse 1.

The first Vse that may bee made hereof, is, to exhort all men to be carefull to cleanse themselves from this filthinesse and uncleannesse: and to this end let them never give God rest, but with incessant prayers still call on him, till they finde that they are cleansed, that they are out of this gall of bitternesse; for as there is nothing that will bee so bitter and distastefull, nay, terrible unto them, as this being lyable to the wrath of God, due to them by reason of this sinne; so shall they never finde any thing so sweet and pleasant, nay, comfortable unto them, as to bee in the favour of God: for all that the creature can doe, is nothing without God, there is no peace, no comfort, no rest without him; now, if a man have not this favour of God, but bee without it, though hee have never so many other blessings, as wealth, honours and preferments, yet, if any arrow come out of Gods quiver, dipt in the venome of his wrath, bee it never so slight an affliction, it will wound deadly. See this in *Moses*, who, though the meekest man upon earth, and highly in Gods favour, yet hee for his impatiency had his crosse in that which hee most desired, even in that hee should not enter into the Land of Canaan. Sinne conceiving must needs bring forth sorrow, and though it should faile in all other things, yet here it is true, hee that sowes sinne, shall bee sure to reape affliction; that is the daughter, this is the fruit alwayes of such

a mother, beware therefore how you take paines to serve sinne, for hee that does so, shall bee sure to have for his wages sorrow and afflictions, nay death it selfe, as the Apostle saith, *the wages of sinne is death*. A sinfull man, one that is guiltie of this sinne, or any other, is like a malefactor, that hath already suffered the sentence of condemnation to passe upon him, and thereby is liable to punishment when ever it shall please the judge to send a warrant, hee may bee called to execution every houre, unlesse in the meane time hee hath sued forth his pardon; even so it is with the sinner, hee is subject to the wrath of God, when ever God shall please to send forth his warrant against him, hee must be brought to execution, he hath no assurance, no power of resistance, till hee hath got his pardon. Therefore let every one of us labour to procure our pardons in and by Iesus Christ, that so wee may not thus lye open to the wrath of God, which will consume us when ever hee shall but please to say the word, in an instant.

*Simile.*

But some man will bee ready to say, what needs all this? I am strong and well, in good and perfect health, is it likely the evill day is neere mee? no surely, I will therefore goe on still in my sinne; what need I repentance, that am so well in all things?

*Object.*

To this I answer, though thou beest never so well in strength and health of body, yet if God hides himselfe, if hee turnes but away his face from thee, thou shalt finde the matter changed; where and when he is pleased but to turne himselfe, hee turnes with him all things upside downe on a sudden. See this in those

*Answ.*

Numb. 16.  
16.

two hundred and fifty men of the company of *Korah*, they thought themselves well and safe, else thinke yee they would have rooke censers and offered unto the Lord? but see how in an instant, fire came out from God and consumed them. So also *Nadab* and *Abihu*, no sooner had they taken strange fire to offer unto the Lord, but straight the judgement light upon them; for it is said, *And there went out fire from the Lord and devoured them, and they dyed before the Lord, Levit. 10.2.* they were presently consumed even in the places where they stood: in like manner, it will bee our case if wee commit sinne, God may, if hee be so pleased to deale with us, consume us as soone as ever wee have done it, nay, in the very manner, it is his mercy that wee are spared.

*Object.*

But some man will say againe, there have many men escaped unpunished, they have gone free for any thing I could ever see, why may not I escape also as well as they?

*Answ.*

To this I answer, Gods decree concerning salvation and damnation must bee admired at, not pryed in to: what though God in his mercy hath saved others, must hee also therefore save thee, that wilt not repent, but presumest on his mercies? hee calls sometimes those which have beene many degrees worse than others, whom hee hath passed by, and that to shew his power of the Potter over the pot-sheerd: but what is this to thee? looke thou to thy selfe, use the meanes, come unto him by true repentance, and cleanse thy selfe from thy filthinesse, and thou shalt be sure to finde mercy.

The

The second Vie to be made hereof, shall bee to perswade every one, not onely to cease from the act of so filthy a sinne, but also to mortifie these corruptions, which are the source and fountaine from whence all these uncleane actions come: There may bee a restraining of our lusts and corruptions, but it is but for a time, it will breake forth againe; or, perhaps, there may bee an abhorrency and contrariety of one mans nature from this sinne, but this is not out of any hatred to the sinne it selfe, but a forbearance of the act, because his nature cannot abide it, or for some other by-respect, as credit and reputation amongst men; but this is not to mortifie them: for mortification is then true and perfect, when there is a contrary life; that is, when a man that before was unchaste, now if his lusts bee mortified, hee lives quite contrary to that, and is now wholly chaste and undefiled: now, this cannot rightly bee said to bee in a man where there is but onely a restraint of his lust. As in a tree, it is in vaine to cut off the top boughs, so to kill it; unlesse the roots bee plucked up, it will grow againe; therefore men beginne at the root to stub up the tree: so it is with sinne, lost is the labour that strives to keepe it in and restraints it, thinking so to kill it, there is no other way to doe it, but by Mortification, by rooting it up out of the heart, not suffering it there to have the least roome or place; for if it bee but restrained, at one time or other it will grow againe to full strength. And that this may the better be dispatched, let us examine and try our selves by these rules and marks.

V/c 2.

Simile.

Trial whether lust be mortified.

First,

I

First, examine your selves, and see whether there be a particular change which doth follow the generall one of the whole frame of the heart ; whether the heart is wholly changed and turned from all sinne, for if it be not, but is changed but by peece-meale, some of it being reserved for the darling sinne, then it is not true Mortification ; which is alwayes a killing, and bringing under subjection, all lust and concupiscence. Therefore see, first, whether thy heart bee thoroughly wounded with sinne, whether thou dost grieve for all sinne as well as for some particular sinne of profit and pleasure. Then secondly, if thou beest thus wounded, see whether thou longest for nothing so much as pardon in Christ: A condemned person desires nothing, delights in nothing but in the newes of a pardon ; as other things are not at all welcome unto him, a pardon is all that can bee comfortable unto him ; so thou, if thou beest truly wounded for thy sinne, wilt desire and wish for nothing but a pardon ; the remission of thy finnes in Iesus Christ will more comfort thee, than all the world beside. And lastly, if a pardon bee granted, see, Is there a love and a delight in Christ ? Is hee the onely joy and comfort of thy soule ? then well is thy case, thou art in a good estate ; thou maiest bee certaine the roots of thy lusts are plucked up, and then the branches must needs die.

*Simile.*

Secondly, examine your selves, and see whether out of a loathing and hate of this sinne, you bee able to judge aright of it, to perceiue it in its filthy colours, and loathsome pollutions: All the time a man lies in a sinne, hee will have such a mist cast before his eyes, that



that he cannot see it perfectly, but dimly, as it were, by a small light, which will not lay open all the spots and blemishes thereof. To expaine this, I will use this similitude: A man that liveth continually in an house where a bad smell is, he perceives not the ill savour, it is all one to him, as though it were pure and sweete ayre, but one that comes in out of the fresh ayre, hee smells it presently, to him it is exceeding offensive: Even so it is with sinne, an unregenerate man that is used to it, hath long lived in it, and perhaps never knew any other, to him it is naturall, he perceives not the filthinesse thereof; it is as good to him as the purest action in the world; and why? because he is accustomed unto it: Now, custome, you know, is another nature: but let a regenerate man fall to commit the same sinne, why, he is troubled, hee is perplexed, he cannot be quiet, nor can he finde any rest in it, it is unusuall to him, and therefore hee is disturbed at it. And indeed it is a good signe of a righteous soule to be vexed at sinne; yee may see it in Lot, of whom it is said, *2 Pet. 2. 8. That righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soule from day to day with their unlawfull deeds*: Try your selves therefore by this marke, and see whether you can brooke sinne well enough, or bee vexed and disturbed at the committing of it.

Simile.

2 Pet. 2. 8.

3

Thirdly, examine your selves, and see whether your abstaining and keeping your selves from the acting of this sinne be generall and constant, or respecting some places and persons, and but for a short space: this is an effect of the former, for hee that hates a thing, hates every

X

every

*Simile.*

every thing that belongs unto it, and that continually; this is a sure marke, and never failes. Yee may see it in other things; a Dove is afraid of every feather that hath beene an hawkes, it brings a great deal of terrour unto her, almost as much as if the Hawke herselfe were there; such a native dread is implanted in the poore Dove, as it detests and abhorres the very sight of a feather; so the godly man that hath once conceived a detestation against his lusts, endures not any thing that belongs to them, that comes from them. Hee that hates a Serpent, cannot abide the skinne, though it bee never so finely speckled; so true hatred unto sinne, cannot indure motion, or inclination unto it, though it bring never so faire pretences and shewes, it suffers not the least spark to kindle or increase, as wanton speeches, lascivious looks, &c. A sore that is healed at the bottom, is not easily hurt againe, whereas, if it bee but skinned at the top, it is never the better, for in a little time, it will breake forth againe, and be worse than ever: A bone broken, and well set againe, is stronger than it was before: so a man that hath once slipped into this sinne, and is got out of it againe, shall finde his strength to bee increased, and himselfe more enabled to resist that temptation, than ever hee was.

*Object.*

But some man will say, I read of some of the Saints that have fallen into this sinne, and therefore grievously, why then may not the deare children of God fall againe into it.

*Ans.*

To this I answer, Indeed it is possible, for we finde it in the Scripture of *David* and *Salomon*, that they fell;

fel I; nay more, it hath many times come to passe, that they have fallen grievously, as in them before mentioned, and many others; yet, as we read of their falls, so we read of their recoverie out of it, they did not continue in it. Here therefore I will set downe the means against it: And they shall be,

First, for such as have long lien in this sin, perhaps twenty, perhaps fortie, or more yeares, let such, I say, observe these rules following:

First, let them labour to get an humble heart in the sight of this grievous sinne; let them be cast downe with griefe and sorrow for so hainous a sinne, that they have offended so good and gracious a God, one that is of so pure eyes, that he can indure no uncleane thing. It was the practice of the holy Apost'e Saint Paul, he was so farre humbled, that he confessed himselfe to be the chiefe of all sinners, and what could he say more? So also the Prodigall, *Luk. 15.* when he came to see himselfe, and to looke upon his own condition, was so farre from being puffed up, that he was content to stile himselfe no better than his Fathers servant: In like manner, doe thou thinke thy selfe the worst among men, and greatest sinner upon earth, and that God hath been infinitely merciful unto thee, that hath not cut thee off in thy sinne, though thou so long continuedst in it unrepentant.

Secondly, labour to bring thy heart to so good a passe, that thou mayest love God exceedingly, who hath forgiven thee so great a sinner. It is said of the woman in the Gospell, to whom much was forgiven, that *she loved much*: A great deale is forgiven thee, be-

Meanes against fornication.

First, for such as have beene given to this sinne.

Meanes 1

Meanes 2

yond what thy deserts are, doe thou therefore so too : Love much, love Christ that hath beene a Mediator to procure this thy sinne to be forgiven ; love God much, who hath beene so mercifull as to grant thee pardon and remission of sinnes for Christ thy Saviours sake.

*Meanes.*

3  
2 Pet. 5. 2.

Thirdly, take heed lest Satan beguile thee, and bring thee into the same sin againe: you know what Saint Peter saith, 2 Pet. 5. 8. where he exhorteth the brethren to be *sober and vigilant*, from no other reason but only this, *Because your adversary the Devill, as a roaring Lion walketh about seeking whom hee may devour*: the same shall be my argument of perswasion unto all of you, to beware of the Devill, to looke to your selves, lest he should deceive you, and entice you into the same sinne againe.

2  
For such as  
are guilty  
of this sin.

Secondly, for those that are guilty of this sin still, but would faine berid of the sore burthen which lyes heavie upon their Consciences; Let them use these helpes:

*Helpe 1.*

First, labour to get assurance of the pardon and forgiveness of it: No man can be assured of the love of Christ, till he be assured of his love and favour in the free pardoning and remission of his sinnes: for how can a man have peace and quietnesse without this, hee is still in feare of Gods wrath and vengeance to light upon him, and where there is such a feare and dread, it is not likely there should be any love. And therefore in the first place get thy sinnes pardoned.

*Helpe 2.*

Secondly, labour to have a sense and feeling of thy sinne; this is a chiefe thing to be obtained; for where there

there is no sense, there cannot be any remorse or sorrow for sinne, without which there can be no turning from sinne, much lesse any hatred and detestation of it. Now this sense and feeling is wrought in us by Gods spirit, and therefore thou must goe to God by true and heartie prayer, that he would bee pleased to illuminate thee by his spirit, that so thou mayest see the miserable and wretched condition thou art in by reason of thy sin.

Thirdly, lay hold on the Promises, and apply them to thy selfe, make them thine owne; for whatsoever a mans sins be, if he can come to thirst after pardon, to desire that before other things in a right way, and to a right end, then hee may bee sure he hath the Promises belonging unto him: If hee will take them, they are his owne; Christ is his, if he will take him, only he must take him aright, as well to be his Lord as his Redeemer: his Lord, to govern and rule him by his Lawes and Commandements, as well as his Redeemer, to save him by the merit of his death and passion. Christ offers himselfe to him. *Revel. 22. 17.* saying, *Let him that is a thirst, come, and whosoever will, let him take the waters of life freely:* and what greater love can Christ shew than to set himselfe out for all to take him, and that freely too? In the dayes of his flesh, who had more good by him than the Publicans and sinners? them he called, them he saved: the poore diseased wretches, how ready was he to heale them? even so hee is still, hee is every whit as ready to save thee, to heale thee, as he was them, if thou wilt come unto him, and endeavour to lay hold on him. To neg-

Helpe 3.

Rev. 22. 17

Heb. 10. 29.

Mat. 22. 27.

Helpe 4.

Simile.

Iam. I. 14,  
15.

lest Christ thus offered unto thee, is to *trample under foot the Sonne of God, and to count the blood of the Covenant an unholy thing, Heb. 10. 29.* Now what think ye shall bee done unto such? Read that place, and you shall finde, that a much sorer punishment than *death without mercy* they are worthy of, and are likely to undergoe. You read what was done to those that despised the invitation of the King to his Marriage-feast, *Mat. 22. 27. When the King heard thereof hee was wroth, and sent forth his Armies, and destroyed those murtherers, and burnt up their Citie:* In like manner will hee deale with thee; if thou despisest the offer of his gracious Promises now made to thee, he will account thee but as a murtherer, and will destroy both thee and thy City; that is, all that belongs unto thee. Take heed therefore, that thou now layest hold on his Promises and makest them thine owne.

Fourthly, Use abstinency and fasting, for thereby thou mayest get the mastery over thy sin; give it altogether peremptory denials, suffer it not to delight thee in the least cogitation and tickling conceit: It will bee easie to abstaine from it, when the deniall is peremptory; if we cannot put out a sparke, how shall we put out a flame? If wee get not the mastery over the first motion to sin, much lesse shall we bee able to overcome it, when it is brought to maturity in action: Sinne is like the water, give it the least way, and wee cannot stay it, run it will in despite of us: and as a streame riseth by little and little, one showre increasing it, and another making it somewhat bigger, so sin riseth by degrees, *Iam. I. 14, 15.* it is said, *But every*

every man is tempted, when hee is drawne away of his own lust, and inticed. Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sinne; and sinne, when it is finished, bringeth forth death: Where observe three degrees in sinne; first, temptation; secondly, conception; and thirdly, perturbation, or bringing forth: So also *Heb. 3.* It is said of the Israelites, that lust in them brought forth hardnesse of heart. Beware therefore of the beginnings and occasions of sinne, and accustom thy selfe to use abstinence, thereby to master thy lust.

Fitchly, another Helpe may be to resolve against it, to make Vowes and Covenants with our selves not to fall into ny occasion that might be an allurement unto it: Let us binde our selves from things indifferent at first, and then forward from the unlawfull temptations. And that we may do it the more easily, let us make our Vowes for a certaine time, at first but for a little while, afterward for a longer season, and then at last, when we have more strength, for ever.

But some men will here be ready to object and say, I finde my selfe exceeding weake and unable to keepe such Vowes and Covenants; What shall I doe then, who shall be in danger every day to breake them, and so be guiltie of a double sin?

To this I answer, If our frailty herein were a sufficient Argument, then would there bee no Vowes at all: What though thou beest weake and fraile, and so subject to breake thy promises in this kinde? yet remember that they are Gods Ordinances, and hee will put to his helping hand to enable thee, hee will blesse and prosper what ever thou dost vow or promise this way,

*Helpe 5.*

*Object.*

*Answe.*



way, as an Ordinance that he hath commanded. Againe, as thou seest thy selfe more weake, and subj<sup>t</sup> to infringe those vowes, so be sure to use the greater care and diligence to keepe them, bee so much the more vigilant to avoid all occasions that might tempt thee to breake them.

*Helpe 6.* Sixthly, Another helpe may be, to proportion the remedy to the disease; as thy lusts are greater, so use greater abstinence, make stronger vowes against them. As in a place where the tyde beates strongly,

*Simile.* there the banke must be stronger; so where the current and tyde of thy lusts runne more forcibly, there resist them with greater strength, keepe the banke good, repaire it by new renewalls of thy graces in thee, make new covenants against it: There is no man with one thousand, would meet his enemy with two thousand; so doe thou, get as much strength to resist, as thy lusts have power to attempt thee.

*Helpe 7.* Seventhly, Turne your delights to God and heavenly things; whereas you have long beene given to earthly-mindednesse, now beginne to set your mind on heavenly things: There is no true Mortification that is only privative, it must be also positive; a man cannot leave his earthly-mindednes, but he must presently be heavenly-minded. To make this plaine by a

*Simile.* comparison; A man cannot emptie a vessell of water, but aire presently will come in its place; so a man can no sooner be cleansed from corruption, but grace will immediately enter and take possession of his heart; as Salomon saith, *Prov. 2. 10, 11. Wisdome entresh into thine heart, and knowledge is pleasant unto thy soule: Discretion*

*shall*

*shall preserve thee, understanding shall keepe thee, &c.*

Lastly, the last and greatest helpe will bee, to labour by pray 1: God would have thee know that it is his gift: pray therefore, that Christ would baptize thee *with the Holy Ghost and with fire*: that the Holy Ghost may like fire heat the faculties of the soule, to inflame our love to God: for as our love to God is stronger, so our love to holy things will bee more earnest, and consequently our hate to unholy things more strong and perfect: the heart thus inflamed is turned quite another way; it doth so mollifie the heart more and more, making it capable of a deeper impression from the love of God. Hence it is that the Spirit is compared to Wine, because as Wine heateth us within, and maketh us more vigorous and lively, so doth the Spirit heat us with the love of God, and make us more apt to good workes: Now as when a man comes nigh to any towne, hee goes further from another; so when the Spirit carries us nigh to God, it carries us further from our lusts. Christ by the Prophet is said, *Mal. 3. 2. to bee like a Refiners fire, and like Fullers sope*; Now as there is no way to refine silver but by fire, and no way to purge and get out a staine but by sope; so there is no way to cleanse ones selfe from lusts, to mortifie them, but by the Spirit: take yee therefore the Apostles counsell, *Act. 4. 38. Repent, and be baptized every one of you, in the name of Iesus Christ, for the remission of sinnes, and yee shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost*: let us waite for it, and wee shall bee sure to have it, and when wee once have got it, wee shall finde as evident a change, as the Apostles did

*Helpe 8.*

*Simile.*

*Mal. 3. 2.*

*Acts 4. 38.*

Y

when

when the Holy Ghost in the forme of cloven tongues came upon them, as yee may read in the same Chapter. And therefore also when wee finde weaknesse in our hearts, let us know that wee have not been so fully baptized with the Holy Ghost, as wee may be, according to that of the Apostle, *2 T. m. 1. 7. God hath not given us the Spirit of feare, but of power, &c.* when the Spirit is powerfull in us, it will inflame us with the love of God, it keepes men in sobrietie. Therefore art thou weake? art thou cold in holy performances? labour to be baptized with the Holy Ghost more fully: *Iohn* was compassed about with the Spirit as with a garment, *Rev. 1. 10.* So should we be, for without this we are but naked: God kept *Abimelech* from sinne, so he will keepe us if we have his Spirit: And *David* was bound in the bond of the Spirit, now the Spirit is like a bond for two causes: first, every bond must be without us, and so is Gods Spirit, it is his and not ours within us: secondly, every bond keeps the thing that is bound in; and so doth Gods Spirit, it restraines us, it keepes us in, when as otherwise wee would run into all excesse .of riot. And therefore let us pray heartily and labour earnestly to be baptized with the Holy Ghost.

---

HOW



## Hovv to Mortifie Vn. cleannesse.

COLOSSIANS 3.5.

*Mortifie therefore your members which are upon the earth, fornication, uncleannesse, inordinate affection, evill concupiscence, and covetousnesse, which is Idolatrie.*

**H**AVING handled the Doctrine of Mortification in generall, as also come to some particulars, namely, that of Fornication ; it now remaineth that in the next place, following the method and order of the Apostle, I come to the next particular sinne named in the Text, *Vnkleannesse* : And because these two sinnes doe in many things *coincidere*, and differ not greatly in any thing that I can set downe as meanes to prevent them, for what hath beene said of the one may serve for the other ; therefore I shall bee the briefer in this,

Y 2

and

and may perchance make use of some of the things spoken formerly in the discovering of the hainoufnesse of Fornication : The Doctrine then wee shall at this time insist on, is, That

*Doctr.*

*Vncleannesse is one of the finnes that are here to bee Mortified.*

The hainoufnesse of the sin of Vncleannesse.

This sinne of vncleannesse, most Interpreters make to bee the sinne of *Onan*, *Gen. 38. 9.* and the hainoufnesse thereof appeares, in that God was so displeased with him for it, that He slew him presently. Besides, the grievousnesse thereof is manifest, in that throughout the whole Booke of God, we finde not any name appropriated unto it, as if God could not give name bad enough, or would not vouchsafe it any, because men should not know it at all. But now particularly I will lay open the vilenesse of it, by these foure arguments.

**I**

*Gen. 38. 9.*

First, the hainoufnesse of it appeares, because that it makes a man that is guilty of it, a man of death ; you may see it in the example of *Onan*, *Gen. 38. 9.* before mentioned, God cut him off presently, hardly gave any space for repentance. Where sudden judgement lights upon a man, it is a fearefull thing, and argues the greatnesse of Gods displeasure against that sinne ; now, where Gods wrath is so exceedingly inflamed against a sinne, we must needs conclude that sin to be very sinfull, and of an high nature.

**2**

Secondly, it is an unnaturall sinne : All sinne is so much the more hainous, as it is opposite to the nature of a man. We reade but of three finnes against nature, whereof this is one ; namely, bestiality, Sodomy, and this;

this; and therefore it must needs bee of an high ranke, and consequently, a most notorious vile sinne.

Thirdly, the manner of it aggravates it exceedingly; all things done against ones selfe, are the more hainous; as selfe-murther is of an higher nature than murther of another; and the reason is, because all creatures by nature seeke the preservation of themselves: in like manner, selfe-uncleannesse is a great aggravation unto it.

Fourthly, and lastly, that sinne which is made the punishment of another, is ever the greater sinne; now, God hath made this sinne to bee the punishment of all other sinnes, for after a man hath long continued in other sinnes, at last God gives him up to this sinne, as to a punishment of the former: and therefore questionlesse it is a great and hainous sinne.

Now, since you have scene the hainousnesse of this sinne, in the next place, I will shew you the manifold deceits of Saran, whereby men are provoked to the commission of this filthy sinne.

First, men doe goe on in the committing of this sinne, because they doe hope to repent afterwards.

For answer of this, I say, that man who hath a will to sinne, doth harden himselfe more and more by sin; and this sinne of Vncleannesse being a great sinne, it doth harden the heart the more, and doth the more indispose a man towards God.

A man by common reason would thinke, that great sinnes doe make the heart to be more sensible; but indeed it doth not so, for it takes away the sense. Great sinnes are a meanes to harden the heart, so that it can-

3

4

The Deceits of Saran to draw men onto the acting of this sinne.

I

Pro. 2. 19. not repent: *Prov. 2. 19. None that goe unto her returne againe, neither doe they take hold of the pathes of Life; which is meant of Repentance: for God doth not give Repentance to this sinne, because it is a sinne so evident against the light of Nature: as Ezek. 24. 16. Sonne of man, behold, I take from thee the desire of thine eyes with a stroke, yet neither shalt thou mourne nor weepe, neither shall thy teares runne downe: that is, if man will refuse the time of Repentance which God doth offer unto him, when hee doth repent, then God would deny him. It is not in him that willeth, nor in him that runneth, but of God: God will have mercy on whom hee will have mercy, Rom. 9. 16.*

Now, to shew what Repentance is:

What Repentance is.

*Repentance is a change of the heart, whereby a man is become a new Creature, having an inward affection to that which is good, and a loathing and detestation of that which is bad. To shew that Repentance is the Change of the heart, see how the Prophet Hosea, Cap. 7. 14. doth reprove the Israelites for their howling on their beds, because their Repentance was not from their hearts; they did howle much, as it were, for their sinnes, but yet their Repentance was not from the heart, and therefore nothing availeable to them. True Repentance doth turne the disposition of the heart of a man another way than it went before.*

The second deceit of Satan.

Another Meanes that Satan useth to delude the hearts of men, and causeth them to beset uponevill, is, because they doe not see the punishment due for sinne to bee presently executed upon sinners: For answer of this; In that God doth spare to punish sinne, no man



man hath cause to joy in it. God is mercifull, and doth beare many times a long while with men, not to punish them for sinne, to see if they will returne unto him, and repent: But as long as a man doth continue in any sinne without Repentance, so long doth he abuse Gods patience every day and houre, *Rom. 2. 4.* *Thinkest thou this, O man, and despisest thou the riches of his goodnesse, forbearance and long suffering, not knowing that the goodnesse of God leadeth thee to Repentance: Ver. 5.* *But after the hardnesse and impenitency of heart, treasurest up wrath against thy selfe against the day of wrath, and the revelation of the righteous Iudgement of God.*

Rom. 2. 4.

The third  
deceit of  
Satan.

Another Deceit that Satan useth to provoke men unto this sinne, is, to judge uncleannesse by common opinion; that is, to weigh this sinne in a false ballance, and to looke upon it in a false glasse, and not to carry it to the ballance of the Sanctuary of the Lord, and therefore many times they esteeme great sinnes to bee little ones, and little sinnes to bee none at all; when men doe thus mis-take sinne, they judge of it otherwise than it is: as when bad company are together, they doe all allow and approve of sinne, and so *evill words doe corrupt good manners*; and in their opinions doe make sinne to be no sinne at all; not considering that place, *Tit. 2. 14.* *That Christ gave Himselfe for us, to redeme us from all iniquity, and to purifie unto Himselfe a peculiar People, zealous of good Workes.* When a man hath committed sinne, his Conscience is defiled, and so can no more judge of sinne aright, than one that would discern colours in a foule and soiled glasse; but when the Conscience is cleare, it sees

1 Cor. 15.  
33

Titus 2. 14.

sees things as they are, and so is able to judge of sinne by that rule by which our selves shall be judged at the last day. There is a Sanctifying Spirit, which if wee had, wee should judge of sin aright, and the rule where by we are to try sin, is written in the Word of God.

The fourth  
deceit of  
Satan.

Matth. 6. 4.

2 Sam. 12,  
12.

Eccles. 10.  
20.

Fourthly, Satan useth to provoke men to this sinne, when they can commit it in secret, then they will bee bold to doe it: But consider God sees in secret, and he will reward them openly, *Mat. 6. 4. Give thine almes in secret, and thy Father that is in secret will reward thee openly*: Now, wee may judge by the rule of contrarities, that if God doe see Almes that are done in private, and will reward them openly, may we not thinke that hee will doe the like of sinne? For so hee did by *David*, hee spared not him though hee were his owne servant, *2 Sam. 12. Thou didst this thing secretly, but I will doe this thing before all Israel, and before the Sunne*. And thus they goe on boldly in this sin, thinking they shall escape well enough if they can doe it secretly, and not bee seene of men; but they in this despising of God, make God to despise them. Consider, O man, the many wayes God hath to reveale sinne that is committed in secret, *Eccles. 10. 20. Curse not the King, no, not in thy thought; and curse not the rich, no, not in thy bed-chamber; for a bird of the aire shall carry the voyce, and that which hath wings shall tell the matter*. Sinne that hath beene committed in secret, shall bee discovered by wayes that a man thought impossible: Evill men are as a glasse that is soldered together; as soone as the solder is melted, the glasse falleth in pieces: so they that are companions in evill, may for a time bee true  
the

the one to the other, but yet the Lord will one way or other discover their iniquities, so that they shall fall in pieces like a broken potshard; yea, perhaps, the sinner himselfe shall confesse his sinne, as *Iudas* did.

The last Deceit which *Satan* doth use to provoke men unto this sinne, is with the present delight which they have unto it: To this I answer, as *Christ* in *Mat. 5. 27.* *Thou shalt not commit adulterie, for whosoever looketh upon a woman to lust after her, hath committed adulterie already with her in his heart. If thy right eye offend thee, plucke it out, and cast it from thee, for it is profitable that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole bodie should bee cast into hell fire.* Therefore I say, it were better for thee to leave thy delight, than to have thy soule damned in hell fire for ever: by leaving thy sinne thou dost not leave thy delight, for then thou hast a new heart, new desires and affections to delight in better things; so that the forsaking of sinne is but a change of delight, and those finnes which have the greater delight in them, shall have the greater torment, as doth appeare out of *Revel. 18. 7.* concerning *Babylon*, *The more pleasure shee had, the more should her torments and sorrowes bee.*

The fifth  
deceit of  
*Satan*.

Thus have I dispatched in brieft, this sinne of uncleanesse, insisting and enlarging onely some two or three of the Deceits whereby the devill doth beguile the sonnes of men, and lead them captive to the commission of this slavish and abominable sinne; for motives and helps against it, I referre you to those produced in the handling of Fornication.

Z

HOW



## Hovv to Mortifie Evill Concupiscence.

COLOSSIANS 3. 5.

*Mortifie therefore your members which are upon the earth, fornication, uncleannesse, inordinate affection, evill concupiscence, and covetousnesse, which is Idolatrie.*



Now, I should proceed to some application of this point, but because there is a third particular which hath much affinitie with the two former, namely, *Fornication, & Vncleannesse*; I will first speake of that which is here in my Text, *Evill concupiscence*.

By *concupiscence*, men doe understand a degree of this lust of *Vncleannesse*, and it is an evill inclination in the power of the Soule.

*Doctr.*

The Doctrine is this, *Evill concupiscence* is one of the *sinnes* which are likewise to bee mortified; Wee had neede

neede give a reason for it, because men will hardly bee perswaded to thinke it a *sinne*, thus it was with the Heathen, they thought there was no *sinne* in it.

The first reason is, If *Concupiscence* doe cleave unto a man, that is, evill inclinations which the *Soule* by *sinne* is bent unto, then actuall *sinne* will follow, which is the fruit of this concupiscence: It is as a sparke of fire, which being let alone, will grow greater and greater, and like a leaven, though little at the first, yet doth it leaven the whole lumpe, so that it doth produce the workes of the flesh, and therefore it is to bee mortified.

Reas.1.

The second reason is, although a man doe not fall into actuall *sinne* presently after there is *concupiscence* in the heart, yet being mortified, it hideth the *sinne* in a man, and so defiles him, and makes him prone to an evill disposition, and also to bee abominable before God: Therefore mortifie *concupiscence* before it come to have vigor and strength in thee.

Reas.2.

A man is said to bee an evill man, when hee is distracted from Good to Evill: now, evill *concupiscence* makes a man to be so.

There are evill inclinations in a good man, and yet it is by way of *Amisethesis*, it is not his complexion and constitution to have them. Now, an evill man hath concupiscence, and the same is his complexion, and constitution so to bee: Therefore if evill concupiscence bee not mortified, it makes a man to be bad, and in this regard we ought to cleanse our selves from the pollution of this *sinne*.

The third reason is, *Evill concupiscence* being in a

Reas.3.

man, it doth marre all his good actions. To mingle *water with wine*, it makes *the wine the worse*; To mingle drosse with silver, it makes the silver the more impure; So *evill concupiscence* being in the Soule of a man, it doth staine and blemish his good actions; when the string of an Instrument is out of *tune*, then the Musicke doth jarre. A man that hath strong concupiscence in him, he will desire to come to the execution of the workes of them, and so it will have an influence to the effect, and will staine and blemish any good worke he goes about; so that evill concupiscence making a man to bee evil, it doth blemish and staine all the good actions that a man goes about, in that he doth performe them either with vaine glorie or selfe-respect.

The fourth reason why evill concupiscence should be mortified, is, because that otherwise the commandements of God will be grievous unto us, *1 Ioh. 5. 3. For this is the love of God, that we keepe his Commandements, and his Commandements are not grievous.* The Commandements of God are not onely to be kept of us, but so to be kept, that they may be delightfull unto us, *Psal. 103. 1. Blesse the Lord O my soule, and all that is within me blesse his Holy Name:* when *Concupiscence* doth lie in the soule of a man, in its full vigour and strength unmortified, it doth draw in him a reluctance from good duties, as when a man doth will one thing that is good, and an evill inclination doth set upon him, then the Commandements of God will be grievous unto him, even as a man will be unwilling to carrie a burthen long.

Now

Now I proceed to shew you three things observable in this word *concupiscence*.

First, what the nature of it is.

Secondly, the sinfulness of it.

Thirdly, the operation or workes of it.

First, for the better understanding what it is, know that in the soule of man there is a facultie. Secondly, there is an inclination, which doth adhere to the facultie; and thirdly, there are actuall desires which flow from that inclination, by way of *Similitude*, the better to conceive. First, in the mouth there is a palate, secondly, the desired humour, and thirdly, the taste: so in the soule of man, First, there is the naturall affection, secondly, there is an inclination which is the tuneableness, or untuneableness of it, and thirdly, there is the desire, or actuall workes of it.

By *concupiscence* is meant, the evill inclination, and the fruits of the evill inclination, and by it the habituall concupiscence, from whence the actuall desires of evill will follow. *Rom. 6. 12. Let not sinne raigne in your mortall bodies, that yee should obey it in the lusts thereof.* First, there is a sinne, secondly, the lust of that sinne, and thirdly, the obedience, that is, consent to the sinne. There is a concupiscence that is naturall, and another that is morall. As there is a *concupiscence* that is bad, so there is another that is good, and a third that is neither good nor evill. There was in Christ a desire to live, though it were Gods will hee should dye, yet obeying, hee did not sinne. On fast dayes wee are commanded so to doe, yet the desire to taste corporall food on such a day, is not sinne.

Three things observe to be in concupiscence.

*Simile.*

Whats meant by concupiscence.



A double  
Law.

Secondly, it doth proceed from sinne, and one sinne doth begitt another, *James 1. 15. Concupiscence doth bring forth sinne, Rom. 6. 12. Let not sinne raigne in your mortall bodies,* (that is) Let not concupiscence: but to understand what the sinfulness of it is, know that sinne in speciall, is the transgression of the morall Law, any facultie that is capable of a fault, it is sinne, that is the defect of it; Man should bee subject to reason, and reason should cause him to submit himselfe unto the will of God. The morall Law is a rule of action, not of habit. There is a double Law, a Law of action, and a Law which we call that Law, which God did stampe on the very Creature. Take an Epistle, or a learned Writing that is made by art, there may bee Logicke, Rhetoricke, and Grammar rules brought in to confirme it; So in the Law, there is a stampe and a rule, and every aberration from it, is an error in it. If a man did all that is in him, used his best endeavour to subdue his evill concupiscences, and yet cannot, yet it is not sufficient for him, every man hath, or ought to have strength in him, to rule his affections.

Simile.

If a Master command his servant to goe and doe such a thing, if the servant goe and make himselfe drunke, and then goe about it, and cannot bring it to passe, although hee doe his good will for to doe it, hee is not to bee excused, because he did loose his ability through his owne default: So wee: God at the first did make us able for to subdue our lusts, but wee in *Adam* having lost the abilities of our first estates, and yet may recover strength againe, to subdue our  
lusts

lust in Christ the second *Adam*: if wee doe it not, the fault is in ourselves.

Now wee proceed unto the third particular, to shew unto you what is the operation, and working of this evill concupiscence.

It is an inordinate inclination, which doth cleave unto the faculties of the soule, and doth indispose a man to that which is good, and carries him on to that which is evill, and so long as it abides in the soule, it makes him fruitfull to doe evill, and barren to doe good, so that evill actions, the fruits of evill inclinations, doe arise from it, even as water from the fountaine, and sparkes from the fire.

*Concupiscence* doth conceive and bring forth sinne.

There is a different worke of *Concupiscence* in man that is evill, and a regenerate man; In an evill man, it hath dominion over him, so that all his actions and desires are sinfull. In a good and holy man, there is concupiscence also, but it doth worke in him by way of rebellion, hee beholds it as a disease, and as an enemy unto him, and doth labour to mortifie it, hee is enlightened by grace, to see it as a disease, and therefore doth labour to cure it more and more. An evill man thinks it the best way for his happinesse, and that his chiefeft good doth consist in giving satisfaction to his concupiscences, and therefore doth labour to satisfie them, and not to cure them.

True it is, Gods children, *David, Peter, Salomon*, and other holy men have had concupiscences in them, but yet were not domineered over by them; So long as a man doth strive against evill concupiscences, against

3  
What is  
the operation  
of evill Con-  
cupiscence

*Simile.*

gainst the motions and stirrings of them, and that his owne conscience can beare him witnesse, hee doth resist them in sinceritie of heart, they shall never beare sway over him: Take the best actions of a wicked man, the utmost end of them are to himselfe, and if the utmost end bee bad, all he doth must needs be bad: as for example; The end that a husband-man doth ayme at in tilling the ground, and sowing of his seed-corne, is to have a good harvest, and if his harvest prove bad, then all his labour is lost: though the beginnings of a thing bee good, yet if the utmost end of that thing bee naught, all is bad. So that the end of all things in morall actions, doth make the thing either good or bad: Every wicked man doth seeke himselfe in all his actions, hee doth worship himselfe in the utmost end of all his thoughts, so that all his actions, lusts and desires, are evill continually.

What is to  
be mortifi-  
ed.

Now I proceed to shew you, what it is the Apostle *Paul* would have you to mortifie: here something is presented, and to shew you plainly what it is, it doth consist in these two particulars.

First, the habituall concupiscence and secondly, the inordinate lusts and desires that doe arise from it: one wee call habituall, and the other actuall. Now, the Apostle would have the habituall concupiscence in nature weakened, and secondly, hee would have the acts of the lust to bee suppressed. Now, that it is the Apostles meaning, that hee would have them mortified, and that which is to bee mortified is sin, marke that place I did cite before, *Rom. 6. 12. Let not sinne raigne*

in your mortall bodies. In these words are three things observable: First, there is a sinne: Secondly, a lust to sinne: and thirdly, obedience to the sinne, that is, a will to execute the desire of this lust. When the Apostle saith, he would have them mortified, hee would have the heart to bee cleansed from the habituall custome of evill Concupiscence, and secondly, he would have them so subdued, as not to obey them. That you may know the Apostles meaning, and not to lay a straighter charge upon you, then the holy Ghost doth aime at, hee would have all these three to be mortified, the lust, the consent to the lust, and the act of ill. Consider the nature of the things that are to bee mortified; If you take the evill inclination, and compare it with the strength of the minde, in committing of any sinne, they are all of the same nature, they differ but in degree, a lesser evill in the thought, before consent unto it, is of the same nature as a greater, as it is in murther: *Hee that is angry with his brother* unadvisedly, committeth a degree of murther; So hee that slandereth his brother by taking away his good name; committeth a degree of murther, and is a sinne of the same nature, as if hee tooke away the life of his brother. So as in taking away the comfort of a mans life, it is a degree of murther, in as much as that man would take away the life of his brother if hee might; So in lust, if a man desire to commit Adultery with a Woman, and cannot come to the execution of his will therein, to the committing of the act of all sinne, yer the Adultery of the thoughts and affections, are degrees unto this sinne, and are of the same nature, as

A a

if

Exod. 12.  
17.  
Note.

Quest.  
Answ.

Acts of  
mortifica-  
tion.

if he had committed the sinne it selfe. The Commandements say, *Thou shalt not covet thy neighbours Wife*, that is, in no degree at all to hurt her, or to wrong her. If all bee of one nature, and differ in degree, then all are to bee mortified. The same nature is in one drop of water that is in a whole Sea, and the same nature in a sparke, as there is in a great fire; If there bee a right enmirie between sinne and us, wee will abstaine from all sinne; a man doth hate the very colours of his enemy, as Toades and creatures that are poysoned: If a man do abstaine in sincerity from sinne, hee will abstaine from all sinne. The reason why men abstaine from any sinne, is either for love of themselves, or of God; if for love of thy selfe thou doest abstaine from sinne, thou wert as good commit all as some; If for love of God, thou wilt abstaine from all sinnes, from little sinnes as well as great sinnes. Here may a question bee asked, why men doe abstaine from Murther and Idolatry? The answer is, because God did forbid it; and did not God forbid also, *Thou shalt not lust*: God that doth forbid the one, doth forbid the other; and for thy further consideration, know, the holy Spirit of God doth hate every sinne, it doth abandon and hate that heart where these thoughts of lust are nourished. Now, the heart is the habitation and residence of the holy Ghost, wherefore all sinnes are to bee mortified, that the holy Ghost may come and dwell there.

The acts of Mortification are chiefly these, the Apostle would have us take paines with our hearts: men might doe much good unto themselves, would they

they but take paines to consider and ponder their wayer, but when men are carried away with the desire of riches, vaine glory, and other inconsiderations, no marvell if it bee thus with them : If they would but sit alone, meditate, and reflect their mindes upon what they should doe, it would bee a great meanes to make them to alter their courses.

The Apostle when hee would have them mortifie these lusts, hee would have them consider the meanes how to suppress them, there bee strong reasons in the Word of God for them : let them search the grounds they have for the committing of those lusts, and it will bee an effectuall meanes for the mortifying of them : If mens judgements were rectified to see their follies, they would change their courses, and turne the bent of their affections another way; I should deliver many things unto you in this kinde concerning Mortification, to let it bee your care, that it may worke upon your inward affection, that you may make it profitable unto your owne soules, and that you doe not let it passe from you without doing you good.

The Word of God which you heare, is not lost, it shall certainly doe you hurt, if not good, it shall harden if it doe not soften : It is an ill signe if a tree doe not bud in the Spring, but to see it without leaves in the Winter is no wonder at all : So for any to heare the Word of God powerfully preached, and not to have good wrought on them by it ; they have great cause to feare their estates. It is this meditating and taking to heart, which is the first meanes I prescribe for Mortification.

Meditatio  
and laying  
to heart, is  
the Means  
to mortifi-  
cation.

2

Wee are said, secondly, to mortifie, when wee suppress and keepe downe these lusts, if wee keepe them back from their courses, that they doe not bring forth the fruit of *sinne*: All actions, when any *sinne* is executed, they tend to evill corruptions; If wee abstaine from the action of *sinne*, when it doth kill the very inclination. Take any *sin* that a man is naturally inclined unto; whether it bee the *sinne* of Vncleanness, the desire of *Riches*, or whatsoever, custome doth make his lusts to bee stronger, and so doth add to the *sinne*. One light doth shew a thing to bee so, but more lights doe make it appeare more cleare; so there is an addition in *sinne*, as well as in Grace: the more they act in *sinne*, the more they encrease.

Now, when men complaine, they know not what to doe, they cannot bee without their lusts; Let them thanke themselves for it, in suffering themselves by custome to practice them, but by keeping downe the act of *sin*, the lusts will evaporate away in time, though thy lust bee strong and violent at the first; yet if thou wilt let it alone from the execution of it, it will consume and weare away at the last; Therefore keepe downe thy lusts, and suppress them.

3

Thirdly, to weane these lusts, inordinate affections and concupiscences; the rectifying of the judgement, and applying of right meanes, doth mortifie the higher reason; Now, for to mortifie the lower reason, is to turne away the bent of affection on another object: If Grace bee quicke and lively in a man, it turnes away the minde from *sinne*, and the way to weane these lusts, is to keepe the minde fixed and bent

on



on better things, as temperance, chastitie and sobrietie; for all intemperance doth breed lust, and then the Divell doth take occasion and advantage to worke upon a man, but sobrietie and temperance is a great meanes to keepe backe these evill affections.

Now I proceed to make use of what hath beene formerly delivered concerning these three *Sinnes*, *Fornication*, *Vncleannesse*, and *Evill concupiscence*: You may remember what hath beene said concerning the greatnesse of the *sinne* of *Vncleannesse*; It will follow then, if it be so great a *sinne*, we should use meanes to bee freed from it. Those that are guilty of it, let them give themselves no rest, their eye lids no slumber, nor God no rest, till they bee delivered from the band of this iniquity: 1 *Sam.* 2. 25. Remember what *Eli* said to his sonnes, *If one man sinne against another, the Iudge shall judge him; but if a man sinne against the Lord, who shall intreat for him?* When God doth take in hand to afflict the Creature, then it is intolerable, man shall finde it to bee a terrible thing to fall into the hands of the living God. Take an arrow, or a bullet, and let it bee shot into the body of man, it may wound deeply, and yet be cured againe, but let the head of that arrow bee poysoned, or the bullet envenomed, then the wound proves deadly and incurable: There may bee in the body of man many great gashes, and deepe wounds, and yet be cured; but if the affliction lies on the Creature from the wrath of God, he is not able to beare it; it doth cause them to tremble, and his conscience to bee terrified within him, as we see by men that are in despaire.

vse.

A a 3

Now,

Reason.

Now, the reason of it is, God when hee limites the Creature in his wrath, hee doth wound the Spirit, and as it were, doth breake it in sunder, as God doth breake the Spirit, so hee doth susteine the Spirit; but when hee doth withdraw himselfe from the creature, then the strong holds of the Spirit are gone. This is to shew you what a terrible thing it is, to fall into the hands of the living God. This, as it doth belong to all, so especially, to those that have received the Sacrament this day or before, that they make conscience of this *sinne*, if they doe not, they receive it unworthily, and hee that is guiltie of this, is guiltie of the body and blood of *Christ*, he discernes not the Lords body, neither doth hee prize it as hee should, nor esteeme of the *excellency* of it as hee ought: hee discernes not with what reverence hee should come to the Lords Table; therefore saith the Apostle, hee is guiltie of the body and bloud of *Christ*, that is, hee is guiltie of the same *sinne* that those were, that did mocke and crucifie *Christ Iesus*. The *Sacrament* of the Lords *Supper*, is a speciall meanes, and chiefe ordinance of God for the attainment of his blessings, if it bee rightly received; and so it is the greatest judgement that can befall a man, if it bee not rightly received, for *Christ* is chiefly represented therein: The bloud of *Christ* is the most precious thing in the world, when men shall account this holy bloud of the new Testament, to bee but an unholy thing, and to trample it under foot, God will not beare with this.

Now, when a man doth come to the Sacraments in a negligent manner, in not preparing himselfe unworthily

thily to come, hee is guilty of the bloud of *Christ*; For yee are not onely to bee carefull to prepare your selves before the receiving of the Sacrament, but also of your walking afterwards. Therefore consider, you that have received the Sacrament, or intend to doe it, that you doe cleanse your selves from this pollution of heart and spirit, and that you doe put on the wedding garment, that is required of all worthy receivers; Let your hearts bee changed, and your affections and actions bee free from all kinde of euill, and your hearts bee turned to God, else you cannot bee worthy receivers, and so much shall suffice for this use, that seeing this sinne is so great, every man should endeavour to free himselfe from it. Secondly, seeing the Apostle doth not onely exhort us to abstaine from it, but also mortifie, kill, and subdue it; If there were nothing but a meere abstinence from ill, then it is not properly a mortification, for then the impurest adulterer should sometimes bee chaste after his impure manner of committing it; and therefore the cessation of it is no true mortifying of it; and that you may know mortification aright, I will give you three signes.

First, you shall know it by this, if there went a generall reformation both in heart and life before, when the heart is generally set aright, is changed and renewed to good, and from thence doth arise a dying to these lusts, then it is a good signe, but if otherwise there bee no particulars changed in thee, then it is but a cessation, not a mortification, but when the whole frame of the heart is altered, yea, even

3  
Signes of  
mortifica-  
tion.

I  
Is a gene-  
rall refor-  
mation in  
heart and  
life.

even from the very roote, when theould man in the body of sinne is wounded even to the heart, that is, when a man hath beene soundly humbled for his sinne, and afterwards hath his heart affected to Christ, and is become to love God, and ha h his minde changed, then hee may truely reckon it mortification.

2  
Signe of  
true Mor-  
tification,  
is a right  
judgement  
of sinne,  
and a true  
loathing  
it.

*Simile.*

Secondly, you may know true mortification by this, by having a right judgement of sinne, and a true loathing and detestation of it; It is hard for a man while he hath any sinne in him, to judge rightly of it, for then a man is given to an injudicious minde, while hee doth continue in it; As when a man is in prison, if hee have continued there long, though the sent bee bad, yet hee cannot discern it; but let this man bee brought to fresh ayre, and bee carried to that prison againe, then hee will smell the noysomenesse of it. So, when a man is in sinne, hee cannot truely judge of it, but when hee is escaped from it, then hee can rightly and truely detest, and judge of it: when a mans soule is righteous, there is a contrarieie betweene him and uncleannesse, a righteous soule doth detest sinne, both in himselfe and others; as *Lots* soule was vexed with the abomination of the *Sodomites*. Consider how you are affected with the sinne of others: *Rom. 1. verse 32. They were not onely worthy of death, who did commit sinne themselves, but also they that had pleasure in others*; when a man can truely detest sinne in others, as *Lot* did, and doth truely loath it in himselfe, then it is a true signe of true mortification.

The

The last thing to know mortification by, is an actuall abstinence from every sinne: it is one thing to dislike a sinne, and another thing to be weary of it, and to hate the sinfulness of it; If mortification be true, he will hate all kind of uncleanness with an inveterate hatred, bee it of what degree it will: Sheepe doe hate all kinde of Wolves. If a man doe truly mortifie, &c. his hatred to sinne will be general, not onely in abstinence from grosse sinnes, as murder, adultery, and fornication, but also from all other sinnes: For, when a man forsakes sinne out of hatred, his rancor is of judgement more than of passion, and so likewise his hatred will be constant. Men may be angry with their sinnes sometimes, and fall out with them at other times, and yet be friends againe: but if they doe truly hate sinne, their abstinence from sinne will be constant, when a man becomes a new creature, there will arise a contrarietie to sinne in his nature, so that if a man doe hate sinne, he is truly said to mortifie.

Here may a question be asked.

Whether after true mortification, a man may fall into the same sinne againe or no?

For answer hereunto, I say, a man may fall againe into the act of sinne and uncleanness after mortification, for the gates of Gods mercy stand open to men after their greatest relapses: but yet he doth never fall into the love of sinne, and of purpose for to sinne. Though he do fall into the act, he doth not returne to allow of it, and to wallow in the mire: for, it is impossible to doe so after grace, yet we cannot

B b

shut

3  
And last  
signe of  
mortifica-  
tion is, a-  
ctuall ab-  
stinence  
from sin.

*Quest.*

*Answ.*

shut up the gates of Gods mercy to those that have often relapsed, so that a mans conscience is witnesse unto him, that he is not remisse in the meanes he should use: though he fall into the act of sinne unaware, yet he doth it not with set purpose: Now, you may judge whether you be mortified, yea or no.

The meanes to mortification are these:

I  
Meanes to  
labour for  
the assu-  
rance of  
pardon for  
our sinnes.

The first meanes to mortifie, is to labour for the assurance of pardon for thy sinnes. Sinne is never mortified, but by the sanctifying Spirit; there may bee a restrained spirit in us, to keepe us from the act of sin, but it can never be mortified, but by the sanctifying Spirit of God, pardon for sinne is had by the assurance of faith in *Christ*, and the way to get this forgiveness, is to be truly humbled for our sinnes, acknowledging our owne misery, and our owne wants, and to lay hold upon the mercies of Christ Iesus, and to be lifted up by the promises of the Gospell; Consider, whatsoever your sinnes be, whether against the light of nature; or against knowledge; Let a mans relapses be never so great, and aggravated with never so many circumstances, nevertheless, if a man will come in, our commission is to propound unto them without all condition, or exception, that the gates of mercy stand open for them: *Mar. 16. 15.* there is our Commission, *Goe yee into all the world, and preach the Gospel unto every creature.* What this is in the next Verse it is said, *If a man will beleeve, he shall be saved; but he that beleeveth not, shall be damned.* Therefore whatsoever your sinne be, let nothing hinder you to come in, for if you come in, God will receive you to mercy, all the

the hinderance then is in our selves. Consider these two places of Scripture, 1 Cor. 6. 9. *Paul speaking to the Corinthians, of the greatest sinne that ever mans nature was capable of; Such were yee (saith he) but now yee are washed, and are sanctified, and justified in the name of the Lord Iesus, and the Spirit of our God: So in the 2 Cor. 12. and last verse. The Apostle doth make no question, but that they might repent, and have forgivenesse, you may know how willing God was to forgive great sinners; all the matter is, if we be willing to apply this pardon to our selves. To leave our sinnes in generall, to take Christ to be a King, as well as our Saviour. To deny our selves, and to take up Christs Crosse: and then there is no question, but wee may have this pardon sealed and assured us.*

Certaine it is, men will not doe this, as to deny themselves, and to take up Christs Crosse, till they be duely humbled, and have repented their sinnes; but so it is, that men will not prize Christ, untill that vengeance fall upon them for their sinnes: would they but doe it, they might be sure of this pardon, were their humiliation true and sincere, it is sufficient, the last of the Revelations, vers. 17. *And the Spirit, and the Bride, say, come, and let him that heareth, say, come, and let him that is a thirst come, and whosoever will, let him take of the water of life freely. First, here is, Let him that heareth, come, that is, To all whosoever this Gospell is preached unto, the promise is generall to all: here is also added, Let him that is a thirst come: there is further added, Let whosoever will, come; come that will come, and take of the water of life freely, seeking God in sinceritie of heart,*



2  
Meanes is  
abstinence  
from all  
occasion  
of sinne.

with forsaking of all their sinnes. And so much for this meanes of getting pardon for sinne, and to come to true mortification by the sanctifying Spirit.

The second meanes to mortification, is to abstaine from all beginnings, and occasions of sinne, as precedent actions, and objects of ill; It is to have a peremptory abstinence, and full deniall, not meddling with any thing that hath any affinity with sinne; If you doe not neglect to resist the beginnings, this is the way to come unto the utmost ends of it, there be chaines to draw to sinne: *James 1. 14. Every man is tempted, when he is drawne of his owne lust, and is inticed: then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sinne, and sinne, when it is consummate, it bringeth forth death.* This is to cleare God in the matter of temptation, a man is drawne with his owne lust unto it. First, a man doth gaze on his sinne, and dally with it, then hee comes to be intangled in it, so that he cannot get loose againe, even as a fish that is fast to a hooke.

Thirdly, followes the assent unto it, when hee is taken in the net. And lastly, followes the committing of actuall sinne which doth bring forth Death. So, first, there is the chaine that drawes to sinne, Secondly, the gazing on it; Thus *Eva* did admire and gaze on the fruit, and did thinke that if shee might tast of it, shee should come to know good and evill, but shee was deceived, so we are deluded by sinne. First, by gazing on it, then by being intangled in it, afterwards proceeds a will thereunto, and lastly, the committing of sinne, which doth bring forth death,

fo

so that death followes sinne; When a man hath committed the sin, it causeth the hardening of the heart, and so makes him not sensible of the things of the Spirit; The greater sinnes doe cause the greater hardenings, and makes the heart for to become evill; and so a man comes to have an unfaithfull heart; as an *Atheist*; o think the Scriptures are not true; that the promises of God are not true: and lastly, unfaithfulness, it causeth a departure from God: as in *Heb. 3. 13. An unbelieving heart causeth a departure from the living God.* Take heed there bee not an evill and unbelieving heart in you, for if there be, then there will be a departing from God, therefore we should not be led by any thing to gaze upon sinne, that wee may not bee intangled in it. Therefore let us at the first, checke the very beginnings of sinne, and resist all occasions.

A third meanes to overcome this sinne, is to bee exercised with the contrary delights: as with Grace and Holinesse. This is the meanes to mortifie the heart, and to empty it of all kinde of lusts, and they cannot bee emptied out of the heart, unlesse better things bee put in stead thereof; you cannot weaken blacknesse, better than by white.

3  
Meanes,  
Grace, Ho-  
linesse.

Therefore the way to change the heart after sinfull objects, and the mortifying of these lusts, it is to get delight in better things, and to labour to have nearer communion with God, and to bee zealous of Gods cause, *1 Cor. 10. 6.*

Last of all, to conclude, The meanes for mortifying of this sinne, is, you must adde prayer unto all the rest: To pray unto God to baptize you with his ho-

4  
Meanes is  
Prayer

ly Spirit. Let a man be left to himselfe, and it is impossible for him to mortifie, except God will doe it; Therefore, wee are to pray unto God to give us his holy Spirit. When the Spirit of God doth come into the heart, it is as fire, and puts another temper upon him than was before; it turnes the strings of his heart to another tune, and doth make him approve of that which God doth require. This is the way to mortifie lust. The more a man is carryed to the love of one, hee is many times the more removed from another; but the more a man is carryed to God, the more hee is wained from inordinate lusts, and being mortified, he is the more inclined to God, *Mal 3.2.* *Who shall stand when he appears? for hee is like a Refiners fire, and like to Fullers Sope.* Christ shall doe that when hee comes, that none else is able to doe. As in refining and purifying the heart, use what meanes you will, except you use fire, you cannot refine drosse from Silver: So staines that are in a mans garment, wash them as long as you will with Sope, they will but seeme the worse; but when they are brought to the Fullers hand, they are soone rubbed out: So let a man bee left to his owne spirit, hee will runne into a thousand noysome lusts; but when Gods Spirit is clothed in a mans heart, then it doth keepe him from the wayes of sinne, *Revela. 1. 10.* it is said of *John*, *That he was ravished in the Spirit, as a man locked in armour*: When the Spirit of God doth possesse the Soule, and compasseth it about, it keepe it from the wayes of iniquity, and causeth an aptnesse to good: *1 Tim. 17.* *For God hath not given us the Spirit of feare, but*  
of

of power, of love, of a good and sound mind. And therefore why men doe neglect it, is, because they know not the way to get it. They know not the power and efficacy of the Spirit, and that is the reason there is so little effect in this businesse. Let a man bee left his owne spirit, and Gods spirit removed from him, he will lust after all evils: Take example of *Eliab*, and *John Baptist*; It is said of *John*, that he came in the spirit of *Eliab*, which did excell in him. Take *Eliab*, and extract that spirit from him which he had from God, and hee would bee but as other men. Take the deare Saints of God, and take but this Spirit from them, how would it bee with them? Even as it was with *David*, when God did, but as it were, hide himselfe a little while from him, into what dangerous *Sinnes* did hee fall? Therefore pray to God, that hee would give you his Spirit, and that will be a meanes to mortifie these lusts within you.

It is the Spirit that doth make difference betweene man and man, and for the getting of it, pray to God earnestly, and he cannot deny you. I will name but one place more unto you, *Acts 2. 38, 39. Repent and be baptized every one of you in the name of Iesus Christ for the remission of sinnes, and you shall receive the gift of the holy Ghost: for the promise is to you and to your children, and unto all that are a farre off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call.* So that the men which are converted at *Peters Sermons*, did aske, *What shall wee doe to be saved?* He said, *Repent and beleve, and you shall receive the holy Ghost;* And further addeth, *The promise is made to you and to your children, and you shall be partakers of it.*

Not,

Not, that the promise of the holy Ghost did belong onely to those that were then present, but to all that have beene borne since, and are to be borne, both of *Jew* and *Gentile*, to as many as shall call upon the name of the Lord. Therefore doe you now, as the Apostles did then, when *Christ* told them he would send them the *Comforter*, they spent the time in prayers untill they had it: So doe you pray earnestly, and be instant with God for it, and then certainly God cannot deny it you; and when you have the Spirit, then you will mortifie those lusts, and all other *sinnes* whatsoever; when you have the Spirit of *Sobrietie*, of *Temperance*, of *Love*, of *Meeknesse*, of *Gentlenesse*, of *Long-suffering*. The Lord grant you understanding in what hath beene spoken. And so much for this time.

---

HOW



## Hovv to Mortifie Inordinate Affection.

COLOSSIANS 3. 5.

*Mortifie therefore your members which are upon the earth, fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, &c.*



One of those earthly members which the Apostle would have us to mortifie, we have already handled; we are now to come to speake of the inordinate affections. The Greeke word is translated by a double word; sometimes passion, sometimes affection, but it is all one, so as the point is cleare, That :  
*All inordinate affections must be mortified*

*Doctr.*

A Doctrine that may well bee handled at large, it being generall and universall, an unlimited word that reacheth unto all particular affections; a Doctrine that concerneth every man: Men for the most part,  
 C c when

when they come into the open view of the World, have a certaine composed habite, but inwardly, are full of inordinate affections: It is a doctrine therefore that searcheth the inward parts, the minds and hearts of men: a Doctrine of continuall use: for though men presse outward actions, yet affections remaine unrulled. Besides all this, a Doctrine of no small difficulty; for as there is nothing easier than to wish and desire, so there is nothing harder than to order these desires aright. For the better handling of the point, observe these three things:

First, what *Affections* are.

Secondly, when they are *inordinate*.

Thirdly, why they are to be *mortified*.

In the first place, I must tell you what affections are: by affections, you must understand all affections and passions whatsoever; for the better understanding whereof, you must know, that there are three things in the soule: First, the faculties which are to the Soule, as the members to the body. Secondly, the inclinations of those faculties. Thirdly, the habits acquired from those inclinations: For example, the appetite or will is a facultie of the soule, and this taken in it selfe, is neither good nor evill morally. Again, there are the inclinations of that will, and these are good or evill, according as the objects that they apprehend are good or evill; and lastly, the habite is, when the Soule doth accustome it selfe one way or other; the habite is good, when the Soule is accustomed to good objects, in a good manner; and the habite is evill, when the will accustometh it selfe

What affections are.

Three things in the Soule.



to evill objects, or to good objects in an evill manner. It is with the passions as it is with the senses. First, we have the sense of hearing, before we heare, and of seeing before we see; then from often hearing or seeing of the same object, proceeds an inclination more to one object than another. From that inclination, a habite in the sense to turne it selfe with most easinesse and delight upon that object: Thus a corrupt habite is bred with us, when the minde or will turnes it selfe often to this or that evill object; and so gets agility and nimblenesse in doing: as often doing brings dexteritie to the hands; so if the will or appetite have gotten a haunt, either to vertues or vices, it contracts a habite to it selfe. Now to shew you what an affection is, wee define it thus: *An affection is an inclination or motion of the appetite, upon the apprehension of good or evill.* I call it an inclination or motion, for it is the bent of the will to this or that thing: As for example, when we outwardly love, feare, or desire, that is a motion; and for the Inclination, we are to know, that in man, there is a double appetite; the first is *Sensuall*, which apprehends things conveyed to the senses; as to the eye and eare, and so is affected to love, feare, or grieve; this I call the sensuall appetite, because it is of objects apprehended by fantasie. Secondly, there is a *Rationall* appetite; the object of that, is that which the understanding apprehends; and from hence proceed affections to riches, honour, preferment, &c. the will being conversant about it. Remember this distinction, because of the matter that followeth, namely; that the appetite is double, *Sensuall*

What an  
affection is

A double  
appetite.

A double  
appetite.

*suall* and *Rationall*, and affections are placed both in the sensuall, as we love, feare, and desire objects exposed to sense; and in the rationall, as we love, feare, or desire the objects which reason apprehendeth.

Now to draw this generall division into two main heads: Nature hath planted an appetite in the creature to draw to it selfe that which is good, and to cast away that which is evill; therefore are these affections such as apprehend either good or evill, to keepe the one, and to expell the other; those that apprehend good, if they see it, and apprehend it, they love and desire it, and love desires to bee united to the thing loved, and a desire is a making towards the thing absent; when the thing is present wee joy in it, when it is comming towards us, and there be a probability to have it, then comes hope in; if wee be like to misse of it, then comes in feare; if no probability of attaining then comes in despaire; if there be any impediments against reason and right, then wee are angrie at it; and this anger is an earnest desire to remove the impediments, otherwise, if wee see reason and justice to the contrary, then we are not properly angry. These are the affections that are about good, and these are the first kinde of affections.

The second sort of affections, are those that are about evill; as in the former there is love of *God*, so here, to turne away from evill, is hatred; if evill be comming and wee be not able to resist it, we feare, if we be able to overcome it, then we are bold and confident; if we be not able either to overcome, or resist the evill, we flie from it; if it be unavoydable, presently we grieve

at

at it. But to handle them more severally, and so to know them as they have reference to good or evill, for except wee know them thus, it is worth nothing to us.

There are therefore three sorts of affections, *Naturall*, *Carnall* and *Spirituall*. First, *Naturall*, these affections arise from Nature, and tend to naturall objects; as for example, to desire meate and drinke is naturall, but to desire it in excess is not naturall; because the objects of naturall affections are limited by nature, namely so much, and no more: Nature hath certaine measures, and extents and limits, and those shee exceeds not: Naturall affections make us but even with beasts. Secondly, there are *Carnall* affections, which are lusts that arise from the corruption of nature, and those tend to evill objects, or good objects in an evill manner: those affections make us worse than the Beasts, like unto the Divell, *Iohn 8. 44. You are of your father the Divell, and his lusts ye will doe*: that is, those that have these lusts are as like the Divell, as the sonne is like the father: those that are bound with these bonds are like him: that is, they come in a degree to the corruption the Divell hath in a greater degree. Thirdly, *Spirituall* affections are such as arise from the Spirit, that is, from the renewing part of a man, and tend to good objects in a holy manner: Naturall make us no better then Beasts, carnall than Devils. Spirituall makes us better than men, like to God, having his Image new stamp on us; they lift us up above men, and make us like to Angels. Thus you see the three kindes of affections in men.

Three  
sorts of af-  
fections.

We must onely answer one question before we goe any further ; the question is this : Whether there be no spirituall affections, except they proceed from a generall disposition, because many men seeme to have good flashes now and then, and so seeme to be regenerate ?

I answer, no, they are not spirituall, regenerated affections, because these affections in the soule, howsoever, they are good in regard of the Author, the holy Ghost, that puts them in, are not so in regard of the subject, man, who is yet in corruption, and not renewed. If a man have never so much skill in Musicke, if the Instrument be out of tune, the Musicke cannot be good ; so the affections, as the spirits suggestions are good, but in a carnall man, they are as an Instrument out of tune : It is true that flashes make way to Conversion, but onely when the heart is in tune, and in a good frame, then are the affections good ; that is, then onely effectively good, so as to make the heart good, and then the fruit will be good, such as God will accept. So much to shew what affections are.

2  
Affections  
when in-  
ordinate.

Now we are to shew when they are inordinate: but first, know, the affections are placed in the soule for the safegard of it, that is, to give the watch-word, that we may repell evill when it is coming ; those that are about good to open the doores of the soule to let it in, and to make out for it if it be wanting : as guides that are for the service of the soule, to put us onto worke, & to be more earnest in our actions, they bring aptnesse and diligence in doing ; when they misse

misse these ends, then they hinder us in stead of profiting us, hurt us in stead of helping us, carry us to evill objects in stead of good, then they are inordinate either in the maner, or in the end. This premised now, that we may further know them when they are inordinate, observe these two things.

First, examine them by the rule which is the maine way of triall: if they goe besides the rule they are inordinate.

The first rule is, that the objects must be good, else the affection is inordinate, there must be love of God, sorrow for sinne, delight in God, then it is good; but on the contrary, to disgrace holinesse, to condemne excellency in others, to hate that wee should cleave to, abominate the good we should embrace, these affections are naught.

The second rule is the end; examine if they take their rise amisse; though the object be good, yet if the manner be naught, they are inordinate: Now the manner is naught when the end is naught; as for example, many men desire and seek for excellency of parts, but to what end? Why, for vaine glory, not to doe God service: This is for a wrong end: so zeale is an excellent affection, none better, but if the end be naught, the affection cannot be good. *Iehu* was zealous, but he altogether respected him selfe.

The third rule is, though the object be right, and the end right, yet if it exceed the measure, the affection is not good: *Dauids* love to his children was good, and the object good; yet he fayled in the measure. *Moses* anger was good, yet when he cast the Tables

The first  
tryall of  
inordinate  
affections  
is, to exa-  
mine them  
by the  
Rule.  
*Rule 1.*

*Rule 2.*

*Rule 3.*

out

out of his hand, it was an excesse, and defective because exceeding, though excellent and commendable in another kinde.

*Rule 4.*

The fourth rule is, though the object be right, the end right, the measure right, yet if the affection be not in order and season, that is, if it take its wrong place, and thrust into the roome of another, it is a cause to make it inordinate: As for example, to desire to doe businesse in a mans calling, is good, but if this desire, prevaile with him at such time as he should bestow in prayer and holy duties, as when he should come to heare the Word, then they are inordinate; for season must be kept too: therefore when an affection comes, if not in season, answer it as Christ did, *The houre is not yet come*: this is the way to judge of them by the rule.

The second trial  
by the effects.

*Effect 1.*

The second way of tryall, is to know them by their effects, and they are foure, as the rules are foure.

The first effect is, if any affection hinder reason, so as to trouble the action, then it is inordinate; for affections ought to be servants to reason; if they disturb, then they are not right: As for example, teare is set in the soule to give the watch-word, to prevent evils; if it shall appale a man, so as to let his weapons fall, thus it troubles reason: Ioy was put in the soule to oyle the wheelles, and to quicken it more; If it doe more astenish than quicken; if immoderate joy, cast a man into an exasie when it should put him on action, or if it breake out into immodest revelings, and not into prayes, thy joy is not good: grieffe is stirred up to ease the soule of paine; now, if it hinder a man from enduring

induring that he should indure, it becomes inordinate. The *Israelites in Egypt*, could not haile to *Moses*, because of the anguish of their hearts, and worldly sorrow causeth death, that is, it causeth distempers; and when it thus crieth up the bones, it eateth up the vigour of the soule, and makes a man out of frame, then it is amisse: though Christs grieve exceeded any mans upon the Crosse, yet he committed all to God without any distempers.

The second effect is, when they indispose us to any holy duty, as wee judge of in distempers of the body, if there be no appetite to meate or drinke; so affections are inordinate, when they indispose us to pray, to doe good, or to speake good, *1 Pet. 3. 7.* the Apostle exhorteth *Husbands to dwell with their wives as men of knowledge*; that is, in such a manner, as you may moderate affections with knowledge; *that your prayers (saith the Apostle) be not hindered*; that is, if there be any disorder in your affections one towards another, it will hinder your prayers. By your affection you may judge, and as you may judge of your affection by your duties; so of your duties you may judge by this rule, how you are disposed to holy duties; if there be any interruption, or indisposition, it is a signe there is some distemper in the affections; all things are not straight in the inward man.

Effect 2.

1 Pet. 3. 7.

The third effect to discover the immoderatenesse of affections, is, when they produce evill actions, which ordinarily they doe, when they exceede the measure and the manner: Anger is an affection set in the soule, to stirre up man to remove impediments,

Effect 3.

D d

and



and thus you may be angry for sinne, and other things too: now, if it be kept in its owne limits, anger is a desire to remove impediments, and not a desire to revenge, that is the inordinatenesse of it: to be angry for sinne, because it dishonoureth God, is good: To be angry for other things redounding on our selves, is not evill, so our anger extend but so farre, as to remove the impediments, not to revenge them: As for example, if a man takes away ones reputation, and brings disgrace upon him: now, to desire to hurt such a man, the affection is amisse, because the carriage of other men towards us, must not be our rule towards others: but wee are to make this use of it, to be diligent in keeping off the blow off our selves, but not to hurt another man: this is inordinate. *Be angry, but sinne not*, you may be angry, so as it bring forth no evill actions, or evill effects: so a man may be angry with the insensible creature, desiring to remove the impediment, and put out of the way that which hinders the actions.

Eph. 4. 26.

Effect 4.

The last effect, is, when affections draw us from God, then they are inordinate, because they should draw us neere to him. But, when they make us to forget God, there is their inordinatenesse: For example, wee are commanded, *Deut. 12. 18. To rejoyce in the good things of God*: but when wee shall rejoyce in an Epicurean manner, and forget God, it is amisse: for wee should so rejoyce, that wee should raise up our selves to love and prayse, and give thanks to him: so also for feare and griefe, if wee feare any thing more than God, and grieve for any thing more than

than for sinne, for crosses and losses, more than for displeasing God, these make us forget God, and so become inordinate.

Now followes what it is to *mortifie* them, which wee have formerly spoken of at large; in a word, it is nothing else but a turning of carnall affections into spirituall, and naturall affections to a higher and more noble end; that is, to eate, and to drinke, not onely for natures benefit, but for God, to doe him honour, that is the right end; for to mortifie, is to rectifie, and to bring things that are out of compasse to rule, to see where they are inordinate, and so to turne naturall and carnall affections all into spirituall.

What it is  
to mortifie  
affections.

In the next place wee will see some reasons why they are to be mortified, for reasons doe wonderfully perswade; and necessitie of mortifying once apprehended, makes men goe about it; Let us but consider of what moment it is to have them mortified, what ill if wee doe not, what good if wee doe.

3  
Why they  
are to be  
mortified.

The first reason is, because affections are actions of the greatest efficacie and command in the soule, they are exceeding powerfull, they are the wheelles or sayles which carry the soule this way or that way; in that regard, because they are so effectuell and prevalent; therefore it concernes us the more to take care that wee rectifie them. Time was, when affections did obey the will, and the will the Spirit of God, (in the time of Innocency) but now, that subordinati-  
on is taken away, and that union dissolved, and now the affections move the heart as the wind the Sea,

Reas. 1.

*Simile.*

whether it will or no; therefore it stands you upon to keepe them under. A mettled horse is a delight to the rider, if he be kept under the bridle; so the affections, if they be good, the stronger the better; but the Divell hath no better factors than the affections are, if they be ill, they are the best opportunities for him to doe mischief by.

*Reas. 2.*

The second reason why they are to be mortified, is, because they are those that make us either good or evil men. It is not the understanding of truth, or falsehood that makes us good or evil men, that is but one opinion and judgement; but as the affections are, and as the Inclination of the will is, so is a man good or bad. *Iob* was called a *perfect man*, because hee feared God; and *blessed is the man that delights in God*; and *all things worke together for good to them that love God*. It is the common phrase of Scripture, to judge of man by his affections, when his love is right, his feare is right, and his sorrow right; therefore looke to thy affections which are the motions of thy will; so as thy affections are, so is the man, if mens actions are weighed by their affections: In other Arts indeed, the worke commends the Artificer; but here, though the action be good, yet it is not good, except the affections be good, because the will commands the whole man, so the goodnesse or badnesse of a man are seene in the affections.

*Reas. 3.*

The third reason is, because inordinate affection makes much for Satan to take possession of the soule, therefore it stands you upon to keepe them right and straight, *Ephes. 4. 20. Be angry, but sinne not*, that is, if

*Ephes. 4. 20.*

anger

anger exceed its measure, it opens a way for Satan to come in, and take place in the soule. The example of *Saul*, 1 Sam. 18. 10. will illustrate this, when the women sang, *Sauls* thousand, and *Dauids* ten thousand, the Text saith, *Saul was exceeding wroth, and after that time had an eye upon David*; that made way for Satan, he was exceeding wroth, and the next morning, Satan, the evill Spirit came upon him: so that you see, strong affections open the doore for Satan. *Judas*, when the affections came to the height, the Devil entered into him. Hee was angry at the expence of the oyntment upon Iesus feet, and upon that he harboured the first conceit of betraying him: 14 Marke 4. compared with the 10. Witches, you know, exceed in malice, and this makes way for the Devill to possesse them; and so worldly sorrow, if it come to the height, it exposeth the heart to be possessed by Satan: So by strange lusts Satan slides into the hearts of men, and they see it not; and therefore labour to mortifie them, 1 Pet 5. 8. *Be sober and watch, &c.* that is, if there be any excess in any affection, if you keepe them not in, Satan will enter; therefore be sober, and watch, for if you admit any distemper, hee will enter.

1 Sam. 18.  
10.

1 Pet. 5. 8.

The fourth reason is, because affections are the first petitioners of evill: though they do not devise it, yet they set the understanding on worke; Now, he that is onely a worker of ill, hath not his hand so deepe in the act, as hee that is the first mover: If men are exhorted to abstaine from evill actions and evill ppeeches, men thinke that there is some reason for it,

Reas. 3.

Simile.

but for evill affections they see no such necessitie : but consider you, evill affections produce evill actions ; evill affections communicate evill to man, as fire heats water, and yet hath more heate in it selfe ; so affections makes speeches and actions evill : And therefore God judgeth by affections ; wee indeed judge affections by actions, wee cannot know them perfectly, yet doe wee judge by the same rule as farre as wee can ; let a man have an injury done him, he lookes to the affections, that is, to the man, whether it came out of anger and malice ; if a man hath a good turne done him, he lookes to the affections, if he sees greater good in them than in the action ; for in a good action, the will is more than the deed, the willingnesse of doing it, is of rarer rancke than the doing the thing it selfe : So an evill affection is more than an evill speech or an evill action. In this regard therefore, labour to mortifie them, for they are instigators of evill.

*Vse.*

If affection be of so great a moment as you have heard, then doe that which is the maine scope of all, take paines with your hearts to mortifie them, when they are unruly, to bring them under ; if strong affections solícite us, give them a peremptory denial ; hearken to the Physician rather than to the disease : the disease calls for one thing, the Physician for another : if men yeeld to the disease, they kill themselves. Here is the true triall of grace : to doe something good, when there is no ill to oppose it, that is a small matter : but when strong lusts hale them to the contrary, then to resist them, this

*this obedience is better than sacrifice* : In the old Law, they sacrificed their sheepe and their oxen, but in this obedience a man slayes himselfe; this will is the best part and strength of a man, for, when he subdues his lusts, and brings them in obedience to Christ, hee sacrifice, h the vigour of the will: Man is as his affections are: affections are to the soule, as members are to the body: crookednesse in the members, hinders a mans going: so crookednesse in the affections hinders the soule: those that keepe Clocks, if they would have them goe true, then every thing must be kept in order: so in affections, keepe them straight, because they have such a hand in the will: one hath an affection to filthinesse, another to covetousnesse, another to good-fellowship; according to these, so are they carried, and such are their actions: let their affections be straight, and they turne the rudder of the soule another way, they cast us into another mould: therefore labour to subdue them, and so much the rather, because they make a man not onely good, but abundant in good or evill; god doth prescribe to a man exactly what hee shall doe, but yet leaves some free-will offerings on purpose, to try our love, to try our affections; the rule of dutie is left partly to the rule of affections, that we may abound in good: A man may doe much in resolution, but the affection makes it acceptable. *Paul* might have taken for his labour of the *Corinthians*, but the fulnesse of his love would not suffer him: that is, God and they set him on worke. Thus affections make a man abound in good: it was

*Simile.**Dauids*

*Dauids* love to God, that made him build a Temple to God: In short, affections make a man beautifull unto God and man. Now, if affections are so rare, and yet so subject to be inordinate, it is wisdom to know how they may bee helped; if any thing doth want meanes of helpe, this doth, because it is a hard thing to keepe downe unruly affections; therefore we will come to lay downe some meanes to helpe you to keepe them downe.

Meanes to  
mortifie  
inordinate  
affections.

*Means I*

The first meanes is, that wee labour to see the disease; for no man will seeke for cure, except hee see the disease, the sight of the disease is halfe the cure of it; labour to see your inordinate affections, and to bee perswaded and convinced of them. This is a hard thing, a man doth not see his evill inclinations, because those very inclinations blinde his eyes, and darken his understanding, and cast a mist before him; notwithstanding which, wee must labour to doe that what wee can; as there are divers sorts of affections, so there are divers sorts of distempers, as the affection of anger hath its distemper, and this is more visible; when anger is gone, it is daily seene, and therefore it is of no great difficulty to bee discerned: there are other kindes of affections which doe continue in man, when his heart is habitually carried to an inordinate lust; as to pride, vaine-glory, love of the world: no such affection can bee well discerned, whilst that continues in a man; take a man that hath a continued affection, it is hard for him to discern it; because it doth with its continuance habitually corrupt the judgement, and blinde the reason,  
and



and yet you are to labour to discerne it : And that you may two wayes.

First, bring your affections to the rule and touchstone : Secondly, that you may better know their aberration from the rule, consider, whether the affection have any stop: an affection is like a River, if you let it runne without any stop or resistance, it runnes quietly, but if you hinder its course, it runnes more violently ; so it is with your affections, if you do not observe to know the stops and lets of them, you shall not observe the violence of them so well. So then, the first way for a man to come to know his affections is to observe them, in any extraordinary accident, if any losse come to a man in his estate, or if he be crost in his sports, or hindered of his purpose, let him consider how hee doth beare it ; that is, try how you carry your selves towards it ; this will bee a good meanes to discover our affections : when they come to these stops and lets, they are best discerned by us.

Secondly, in this case, it is good we make use of others eyes ; a man sees not that in himselfe which a stander by doth, hee is free from the affection which another is bent unto, and therefore another can better judge of it : as a man that is sicke of a Feaver, he cannot judge aright of tastes, because hee hath lost the sense of tasting, that which is sweet may seeme bitter unto him ; but hee that is in health, can judge of tastes as they are: therefore it is good to make use of friends, and if wee have no friends, it is wisdom in this case to make use of an enemy ; that is, to observe what inordinatenesse hath beene in them, and what hath hap-

Two waies  
how to dis-  
cerne a  
continued  
inordinate  
lust.

I

2

*Simile*

E c

ned

ned unto them thereby, and so to judge of our owne.

And this is the first thing that I will commend unto you, to labour to see your affections, and to bee convinced of them; when this is done, in the next place wee will come to see the causes of inordinate affections; and seeing we are applying medicines, as wee shall see the causes of inordinate affections, so to each of them we shall adde these remedies.

Causes  
and remedies of in-  
ordinate  
affections.  
*Cause 1.*

The first cause of inordinate affection, is *misapprehension*, that is, when wee doe not apprehend things aright, our affections follow our apprehensions, as we see in a sensible appetite; if a thing be beautifull, wee are apt to love it, and like of it; but if it be deformed, wee are apt to hate it: for as things doe represent themselves to the will, so wee are apt to conceive of them: the will turnes a mans actions this way or that way: notwithstanding, the understanding is the Pilot that turnes the will: so that our apprehension is the first cause of our inordinate affections; by this wee over-valew things that are evill, and undervalue things that are good. Rectifie therefore the apprehension, and heale the disease; labour to have judgement informed, and you shall see things as they are. Affections, (as I said before) are of two sorts, one *Sensuall*, arising from fancie, the other *Rationall*, arising from judgement: All that wee can say for the former affections, is this, men might doe much to weaken those affections in them (if they would take paines) by removing the objects; that is, by withdrawing the fiewell, and turning the attentions another way: if wee cannot subdue any sensuall affections in us, let

us

us bee subdued unto it, and bee as any dead man : In case that wee are surpris'd by such vanities, yet let us not hasten to action or execution. All that in this case a man can doe, is as a Pilot, whose ship is in great danger to be cast away, by reason of a great tempest, all that hee can doe is to looke to the safety of the ship, that waters come not into it at any place, that it bee not overthrowne : so these evill affections that are in our rationall appetite, are these evill inclinations of the will, that are lent either to riches, pleasure, vain-glory, or the like objects of reason.

*Simile*

Now, to rectifie your mis-apprehension of them, first get *strong reasons* for to doe it, read the Scriptures, furnish your selfe with Spirituall arguments, bee acquainted with such places as yee may see thereby the sinfulness of such affections : It is a great wisdom in a man, first to finde out the thing hee is inordinately affected to ; and never to rest, till hee finde the things that are sinfull in him : therefore, the applying of reason will make us able to doe it, and if we can doe so, wee shall bee able to goe through the things of this world rightly : You are inordinately affected to wealth : Apply reason and Scripture here, as thus : It is a wise mans part to use earthen vessels, as silver ; and silver vessels, as earthen ; the one will serve for use as well as the other : So in the things of the World, hee that is strong in reason, and wise, were they represented to him as they are, hee would use a great estate without setting his heart upon it, more than if it were a meane one : and in the condition of this life hee would so carry himselfe,

*Remedy*  
I.

as if he used them not: this the Apostle would have us to doe, *to use the world, as though we used it not*: and then wee should thinke the best things of the world to be of no moment, and that we have no cause to reioice in them. Wee are to use the world with a weaned affection, not be inordinately carried with love thereupon in worldly things; there is an usefulness to be looked at, but to seeke to finde baits in them, and to set our hearts upon them, that will hurt us exceedingly; if we looke for excellency in worldly things, and touch them too familiarly, they will burne and scorch us; but if we use them for our necessity, and so use them as if we did not, we shall finde great benefit and comfort by them. This is the difference betweene Earthly and Spirituall things, you must have knowledge of these, and this knowledge must be affective: the more love you have, the better it is: but in earthly things, the lesse love we have, the better it is: for in earthly things, if our love exceede our knowledge, they are subject to hurt us. What is the reason a man takes to heart the death of his friend, or the like accident? For a while he grieves exceedingly, but within a moneth, or short time after, his griefe is past: and then hee sees the death of his friend is no such thing as he tooke it for, and thought it to be: had hee then seene that which now hee doth, hee would not have grieved so much.

*Remedy 2.*

The second way to rectifie mis-apprehension, is by faith, for by faith wee are to beleve the vanity of these earthly things, and we are to beleve the power of God, who is able to blow upon them, and to cause them

them to wither; so that faith is a great cause to rectifie the apprehension, as well as reason: *Paul* counted the best things of the world, but *drosse and dung*, and *Moses* cared not for the pleasures of Egypt, it was their faith that caused them to doe so, they did beleieve the true priviledge they had in Christ: this doth raise up the heart, and cause us more and more to see the things that are earthly, how slippery and flitting they are.

The third way to rectifie mis-apprehension, is experience; wee are not so much as to touch us of that thing wee have found to bee true by experience; let a Souldier bee told of dangerous effects in the warre, perswade him what you will, and tell him how terrible it is, hee will not beleieve, till by experience he hath felt the smart of it: So when a man is entered upon the doing of any difficult thing, which hee hath beene accustomed to doe, the experience hee hath of often being in such dangers, and having felt no harme, that doth rectifie his affections. Experience is a speciall meanes to tame them; let a beast bee brought to a mans hand that is fearefull at first, but by experience and dayly using of it, so you tame the beast: So our affections are unruly things, like untamed beasts, but when experience hath discovered them, it is a good meanes to rectifie them: therefore it is profitable for us, to call to minde things that are past: If wee would but call to minde how such a thing we joyed in, and yet it staid not with us; our joy would not bee so inordinate in other things: if we would remember how such a crosse wee survived,

Remedy 3.

Remedy

4

our grieve would not be so inordinate in future events.

The fourth way to rectifie mis-apprehension, is by the *example of others*; that is, to see how others have beene affected with the inordinate affections, that wee have beene in our selves; and examples doe runne more into the Senses then Rules doe; therefore thinke of Examples to stirre up Affections, either to crosse them or subdue them. We see by the reading of Histories, as of the valiant Acts of some of the Worthies; as of *Julius Caesar*, and others, some, by reading of great exploits that they themselves had done, have beene stirred up as much as in them lyed, to doe the like, so that examples of others are very effectuell in this kinde. If a man would consider *Paul*, how hee carried himselfe in the things of this life, and how *David*, *Abraham*, and *Moses* were affected to these outward things, what they had, and what they might have had; their examples, and such as we have heard of, to be holy and righteous men, or such as wee now know to bee such, is a great helpe to rectifie the affections, and to set the Iudgement straight.

Cause 2.

The second cause of inordinate affection, is *weaknesse* and *impotency*, which doth sticke in a man ever since the fall of *Adam*, and makes him subject to passion; and therefore yee see the weaker Sexe, as they are weaker in understanding, so they are stronger in passion; let a man be weak, hee is so much the more strong in passions; and as his strength is more, so hath hee more strength to resist them. The way to remedie this, is, to *gather strength*; the more strength wee have, the more able we are to resist temptations; and

Remedy

as

as a man is weake, so he is the more subject unto them, (as when he is young) but strength overmasters them. Affections are in a man, as humours are in a body; when the body is in health, it keeps in these humours that it doth not feele them; but when a man is sicke, then these humours stirre up and trouble a man; So when the soule is in health, these ill humours of the soule, inordinate affections are kept in by maine strength: but let the soule grow weake, and the passions get strength. Now, the meanes to get strength against passions, is to get a greater measure of the Spirit, the more Spirit the more strength: *Ephes. 3. 16.* *Pray, that you may bee strengthened by the Spirit of the inward man:* the more flesh wee have in us, the more weakenesse we have: the spirit that is in us, doth lust after envie, and pride, and the World. Now, how shall we helpe it, but by the Spirit that is without us; that is, by the Spirit of God: Let a man be in such a temper, that the Spirit of God may rule and possesse his heart; while hee is in this temper, his ordinate affections will not stirre, but when the Spirit is away, then there is a hundred wayes to cause them to be unruly: that which seasons a man is prudence, wisdom, and Grace; the more a man hath of these, the more he is able to subdue them.

Simile

Ephes. 3. 16

The third Cause of inordinate affections, is, the *lightnesse of the minde*, when it hath not a right Object to pitch it selfe upon, which, when that wants, the affections being left to uncertainties, they must needs fall upon wrong Objects: When a man in his course wanteth an Object for his aime, the wayes of his

Cause 3.



*Remedy*The right  
object of  
our affe-  
ction,  
God.

his error are a thousand; so when a man doth misse the right object in affection, they have a thousand wayes to draw to inordinatenesse: men runne up and downe with their affections upon uncertainty, and they never cast how to shunne them afterward, till the end of their daies be run out. Now, to remedy this, our way is, to finde out the *right Object* whereon the affections should bee pitched, and this Object is God; that is, the affections must all looke towards God, and have them fixt upon him; you are never able to subdue your affections and to keepe them under, till you pitch them upon God: whilst our affections are loose, they are unsteddy and unconstant; every man, till his heart be set upon God, his affections are wandering up and downe; but when a man hath God to set his affections on, and they are once settled on him, then he seekes another kind of excellency, and frames his life after another fashion, he sets his affections upon other excellencies: As when a man hath a place for to build, if his minde be to have it done with excellent worke-manship, then he will take none but principall stones, hewne and squared fit for his purpose to build withall, but if a man be to build a mud-wall, any rubbish and trash will serve the turne to make it up: So, when our affections are on high matters, such as God and Christ, they looke upon things that are noble, and not upon the rubbish and trash of the world, wee will choose the principallest stones for our principall building; but if otherwise, wee strive to finde contentment in the Creatures, wee care not how we come by them; that is, any rubbish will serve the turne to  
get

get riches withall, and honour and preferment in the world; but if ever you will set your affections straight, pitch them upon God.

The fourth cause of inordinate affections, is, that *confusion that riseth in the heart at the first rising of them*; and they are the vapours and mists that blinde the reason, and make a man unable to resist them, because the putting out of the eye of reason, must needs trouble a man exceedingly; even as a moate in a mans eye troubles him, that he cannot see as he should doe; And therefore these mists that are cast upon the eye of reason, doe make a man unable to resist them. In such a case, the way to helpe them is this; to make up the bankes when the River is at the lowest ebbe; that is, to make up the bankes of our affections, before the tyde of inordinate affections doe come in; we are not at first able to rule these inordinate affections, but yet if the bankes be made up afore-hand, we may mortifiethem. A man is to consider before, how he is able to be affected, and for this, let him looke into the former wayes, and see how he hath beene affected, and how he is apt to be affected againe; and when he is in such circumstances, let him take a good resolution, never to returne to such inordinate affections; as he did before: When a man is sicke of an Ague, to give him physicke when he is in a sore fir, is not the fittest way, it is not then in season; but it were best to be done in his good dayes, before his fir: so we are to make up the banke of our affections, before the tyde of inordinate affections doe come, to have a strong resolution, we will not be led by such an affection as

Cause 4.

Simile.

Remedy.

Simile.

*Simile.*

before. And if this prevaile not, then we are to suspend the execution of our passions, that is, to doe nothing for a time: If a man finde any passion in himselfe, let him abstaine for that time, (if it be possible) from the doing of that which it moves him unto; because that he is then most subject to doe amisse: You see a barrell of Beere, if it be stirred at the bottome, draw it presently, and it will runne muddy; but if you let it rest a while, and then draw it, it will runne cleare: So a man in his passion, his reason is muddy, and his actions will not come off cleare; therefore it is good to suspend the execution, howsoever: For the suspending of the action in time of passion, is very profitable, though a man thinke for the present, whilest the passion is upon him, that he doth not erre, yet because then we are most subject to erre, suspend for a while.

*Simile.*

Passion is a hinderance to the facultie, as jogging is to the arme when it is a shooting, or unto the hand when it is a writing; therefore, if a man doth finde that passion is on him, let him doe nothing: A drunken mans wisest course is to goe home, and doe nothing that night, unlesse the good worke of repentance; our passion is a kind of drunkenesse: the one is almost as subject to mis-take an error as the other.

*Cause 5.*

The fifth cause of inordinate affections, is the *corruption of Nature*, which is in every man since the fall of *Adam*. Will you know the reason, why Beares, and Wolves, and Lyons, carry themselves so cruelly? It is, because their nature is to doe so; Will you know why a sinfull man is subject to affect things inordinately: the reason is, because he hath a bad nature;

Remedy

ture; it is naturall to him to doe it, and as readie to him, as sparkes of fire to flie upwards: We see, some men are apt to be taken with such a disease, that is bred and borne with them, they cannot escape it. Now, the remedy to remove the evilnesse of nature, is, to get *new natures*, that is, to get another nature, a holy, regenerate disposition, untill then, men shall never be able to doe it: many labour to mortifie their affections, but yet cannot, because they are busie about the particulars, and never regard the generall: they can never make the branch good, except they make the tree good, therefore the way to mortifie, is to get a new Nature: Consider whether your nature be renewed, whether that be cast into a new mould, if it be, this is the way to mortifie inordinate affection, this is the way for the generall: So also it should be our care for any particular affection, that wee finde our selves most prone to by nature, labour to thwart nature in that particular: Are you given to wrath by nature? endeavour to be humbler and meeker than oher men: Is your nature more inclined after gaine? Labour to be established with a more free spirit: and this will be a meanesto mortifie you: otherwise, you shall never waine your hearts from earthly things, till you have a taste of such spiritual things, that is, you shall never winne your hearts from joyes, except you have joy and delight in Christ: you shall never overcome the griefe of losses and crosses, except you turne your affections to see the loathsomenesse of sinne: Contraries in nature doe expell one another: cold is expelled with heat:

darkenesse with light; so you must expell carnall affections with spirituall.

*Cause 6.* The sixt cause of inordinate affections, is *carelesnesse* and *remisnesse*: that is, want of spirituall watchfullnesse over the heart, when men rather give occasion unto the affections to be inordinate, than prevent the occasions of it. For the cure of this, *take heed*, not of sinne onely, but of *the occasions of sinne*: for a man to hate sinne, and not to hate the occasions of it, is to deceive himselfe, that is all on, as for a man to walke upon Ice, that is afraid of falling: Iron will move, if the load-stone be neere: So the affections will stirre up, if there be any alluring sinfull object.

*Remedy.* And therefore, if sinne knocke at the doore of your hearts, you must not let it in presently, but aske his errand, plead the cause with it, and consider the hindrances and inconveniences that come by it. For a man to say, I will give over my lusts, and yet will keepe such company as he did before, and use his old haunts, hee doth but deceive himselfe:

*Simile.* *Proverb. 29. 19. Make no friendship with an angry man, and with a furious man thou shalt not goe: Prov. 23. 30. Be not amongst Wine-bibbers;* that is, if thou hast used this company, and usest it still, thou fleest not occasions of sinne: and therefore we must watch over our soules, the *heart is deceitfull above all things*: take heed to the beginning of your affections, and looke to the beginning of inordinate lusts, when you see it rising, if you perceive but a glimpse of it, quench and resist it, else it will cost you a great deale more paines afterwards: the affections by little and

Prov. 29. 19  
& 23. 30.

and little, giving way to them, will soone get strength, if you let them alone, you set your hearts and mindes on fire: A man that is full of anger, or any passion, knowes not how to helpe himselfe, so dangerous is it to give way to affections, that they carry a man unawares to inordinatenesse; the best way therefore is to quench it at first; if you cannot quench it when it is a sparke, how will you doe when it is a flame? As you are to looke to the beginning, so take heed of making false truces with them; for inordinate affections doe more hurt by ambushes and secret invasions, than by open warre, therefore looke to them on every side, lest they rob you of Grace before you are aware.

The seventh cause of inordinate affects, is, *the root whereon they grow*, labour to see the root, and remove it: If one affection do distemper the minde, it drawes on another distemper, and you cannot lessen that later inordinatenesse, unlesse you weaken the former, which was the roote of it: As for example, Anger growes upon pride, you shall never lessen or cure that affection of anger, except you weaken pride: Now, pride causeth anger and contention; *Jonah* was angry, whence came it but from his pride? When a man through pride knowes not himselfe, he forgets God; and this man that forgets God, will be violent in his griefe, in his complaints, in his feares, in his desires, and will never be healed, till he be humbled, and brought to a base estimation of himselfe.

Cause 7.

Lastly, I would have you to know, that God is the onely Agent in this worke of mortification: and therefore have dependance upon God, for it is Gods

*Pfal.* 33.  
13, 14

Spirit that must cause a man to mortifie: man is not able of himselfe, except God perswade him, *Psal.* 33. 13, 14. Except the Lord speake once and twiceto us, we will not regard it: *Paul* was troubled with a strong affection, what doth he? He goes to God, and prayes to him to take away that strong mist: and so must we doe, pray to God in Faith, doe but beleeve, and we shall have our requests granted: continue in Prayer, and hold out without wearinesse, and be your affections what they will be, yea never so strong: such as you thought would never be mortified: yet you shall overcome them.

*Use.*

The last use that is drawne from hence, is this: If inordinate affections are to be mortified, then is any excesse in any desire sinfull, and for which we ought sharply to reprove our selves: many grieve for some other temporall things, this is inordinate, when they can yet joy in other things: so we qualifie our griefes with joyes, and our joyes with griefes, we are not inordinate: but we are to take heed of excesse in them, for that makes them sinfull: as our over-grieving at crosses and losses: our over-loving of earthly things: too much delight in sports: These are turned into sin to us, affections are set in the heart for the safeguard of the soule: A foole indeed, for want of skill, may hurt himselfe with them, but he that is skilfull, knowes how to use them without prejudice to himselfe: and if they be thus well used, they are very serviceable to the soule: but if they be once strong-headed: that is, get the bridle betweene their teeth, so as they will not be ruled, then they prove hurtfull unto us:

Marke



Marke what the wise man saith of the lust of uncleanness: and it is true of all such lusts, *the strong man is slaine by them*: therefore fight against the lusts of uncleane and inordinate affections. And that you may doe it, and be willing to part with them, marke these motives following.

The first motive I take out of 1 Tim. 6. 10. The Apostle speaking of covetousnesse, calls it, *the roote of all evill, &c.* and what may be said of this may be said of any other sinne very truly; this is one motive: Inordinate affections promise profit and contentment, and yet will pierce you thorow with many sorrowes; that is, it taketh away the health and tranquillitie of the soule: even as the worme doth eate the same tree that doth breed it. And looke as the inward heat of an Ague is worse than the outward heate; so these inward Vicers of the soule and affections doe trouble us, and pierce us more than any outward grievance whatsoever, that can assault the body: Let a man have houses in the Citty, goodly Gardens, Orchards, Lands, and all contentments on every side; yet his inordinate affections doe not suffer him to enjoy any one of these, nay, nor to enjoy himselfe; hee cannot converse, talke, or meditate with himselfe; it makes a man to bee wearisome to himselfe; It hinders a man altogether from doing that which is good: One disease of the body is enough to take away all comfort outwardly that a man hath; and one inordinate affection of the soule, takes away all pleasure and contentment within: Let a man bee sicke, neither rich Cloathes, nor a faire

Motives to  
conquer  
and master  
inordinate  
affections.

Motive 1

Simile.

Simile.

faire chamber, can comfort him; so let a man have but one inordinate passion, all other things are nothing to him; he takes no pleasure in them.

*Motive.*

2

Prov. 13. 14

The second Motive is taken from that of *Salomon*, *A mans spirit will beare his infirmities, but a wounded spirit who can beare?* that is, this doth make a man unable to beare any thing else: For example, A strong love set upon the things of this life, wounds the soule; and so makes it unable to beare the least losse of any of them, it deads the heart within a man: So immoderate grieffe addes affliction to affliction; Immoderate feares are worse than the thing feared, whereas otherwise, afflictions are nothing grievous, if they be rightly used: *Paul* was in prison, and so were *Ioseph's* Brethren, yet you see the difference; the one full of joy, the other full of grieffe and sorrow, because they had sinned; their Consciences were not whole, they could not beare their burthen: therefore, looke to your affections, that you may passe thorow the changes of this life with more comfort, if you cannot bring your minde to the doing of this, then bring those things to your minde, labour to mortifie them, and that is the best way to bring your mindes to the things; my meaning is, if you cannot bring your minde to love worldly pleasure and contentments lesse, mortifie them to your minde; that is, looke not at them as pleasures or contentments; if you must love them, let them seeme lesse lovely to you: die to them in affection, or else, let them die to you in apprehension; True indeed, without Gods over-ruling Power, wee can doe nothing; yet wee must use the meanes,

meanes, as wee see in the casting of a Die, it is not in us to win as we please, but yet the playing of the cast is requisite; for the mortifying of the affections, it is not in us, yet we must use the meanes for to doe it; let us not give satisfaction to any lust, but hinder it to our powers: It is a shame for us to have our hearts affected with any sinfull lusts, were we more carefull of our Soules, these inordinate affections would be more broken and kept downe by us. Beleeve it, strong affections breed strong afflictions, and say, thou shouldst have riches and contentment in earthly things, and yet have inordinate affections, this is no helpe for thee, it is but an applying of an outward plaister to an inward sore, that will doe it no good.

Simile.

Simile.

The third Motive is taken from 1 Timothy 6.9. the Apostle speaketh there of the Desire of Riches, hee saith, that *It breedeth many foolish and hurtfull Lusts*, in that regard we should mortifie them, because they are foolish Lusts, and foolish, because hurtfull, when a man hurts himselfe out of some mis-take, or by his owne heedlesse-ness, hee is properly said to bee a Foole: It is properly folly, when a man hurts himselfe, whilest he seekes to doe himselfe much good; we seeke to doe our selves good, when we give satisfaction to every Lust, but yet we hurt our selves; strange Affections invite us to sinne, and sinne brings to misery; and thus they are hurtfull. Shun them therefore, seeing God hath appointed them to be mortified, let us mortifie them; whatsoever God hath appointed to be mortified, and we will not doe, it is as hurtfull for us, as *Achans* Wedge was to *Achan*

Motive

3  
1 Tim. 6.9

G g

which

Judg. 6. 14

which is called a *curſed thing*: And ſo every unmortified luſt is a *curſed thing*. Take we heed of it.

Motive

4

Jam. 1. 20

The fourth motive is this, becauſe inordinatenefſe of affections hinders us in the doing of the good actions, wherein our happineſſe doth conſiſt, they make the faculties of the ſoule unfit to doe the things they ſhould doe: as *James 1. 20. the wrath of man worketh not the righteouſneſſe of God*; that is, it diſableth a man to worke that righteouſneſſe he ſhould doe; and what may be ſaid of wrath, may be ſaid of any other affection; As of malice: *1 Pet. 2. 1. Wherefore laying aſide all malice, &c.* that is, while theſe are in you, you cannot heare the Word as yee ought; So for inordinate deſire of gaine: *Ezek. 31.* the reaſon why the people heard without profit, was, becauſe *their hearts went after their covetouſneſſe*: Mortifie theſe luſts, and then you ſhall goe with eaſe and ſafety in the way of godlineſſe, yea, we ſhall be carried to it, as a Boate is with the winde, with all facilitie and expeditenefſe.

1 Pet. 2. 1

Ezek. 31

Motive.

5

The fifth motive is, becauſe of the ſhame and diſhonour they doe bring men into; men are afraid of ſhame in other things; it were to be wiſhed, they were ſo afraid of ſhame in this: Every inordinate affection is a ſhort drunkenneſſe, and it brings the drunkards ſhame to a man; drunkenneſſe diſcloſeth all, and ſo if there be any corruption in the heart, inordinate affection drawes it forth. Every man is aſhamed of indiſcreetneſſe in his carriage; now, what is the cauſe of indiſcreetneſſe? it is the defect of wiſedome, either the forgetfulneſſe, or not heeding of the time, place,

place, or action we are about, and what makes this forgetfulnesse? It is the drunkennesse of passion. When the Apostle *James* would shew who was a wise man, he saith, *he will shew out a good conversation in his workes*; there will be meeknesse and gentlenesse in his carriage and behaviour; but, if there be any envy or strife in the heart, this shews a man to be but a weak creature: whereas on the contrary, it is an honour in a man to passe by an infirmitie; That is a signe of a strong man, that is able to overcome himselfe.

Iam. 3. 13

The sixth motive is, because they blinde the reason and judgement, which should be the guide of all our actions in the course of this life; that which is said of bribery, that it *blindes men*, and that the affection to the bribe makes the sinne a great deale more; the like may be said of other finnes: As long as passion rageth, thou canst neither judge of thine owne, nor of others faults: If thou wouldest judge of another mans fault, *take away the beame that is in thine owne eye*; And so if thou wouldest judge of thine owne faults, these affections must not blinde the minde and the reason, for so they will hinder us in discerning good, and in doing any thing that is good; for when the minde is corrupted, the will is corrupted; and then in stead of walking in the wayes of God, wee walke in the paths of sinne, therefore, in regard of the safety and securitie of our lives and actions, wee should mortifie these our affections.

Motive  
6



# HOW TO MORTIFIE COVETOUSNESSE.

COLOSSIANS 3.5.

*And Covetousnesse, which is Idolatrie.*



*Covetousnesse, which is Idolatrie*, that must be mortified as well as the other earthly members. Now, this *Covetousnesse* is nothing else but an inordinate and sinfull desire, either of getting or keeping wealth or money. The inordinate lusting after honours, that is called Ambition, too much affecting of beauty, is called lustfulnesse. And lust is an inordinate affection, which when it propoundeth riches for its object, it is called *Covetousnesse*, which is Idolatry. Now, Idolatry consisteth in one of these three things.

Fi ft,

First, in worshipping the true God in a wrong manner, apprehending him as a Creature, giving that to him that agteeth not with him.

Secondly, when as we make the Creature a God, by conceiving it under the Notion of a God, so did they who worshipped *Iove, Mars*, and these Heathens that worshipped the creatures as Gods.

Thirdly, when we attribute that unto it which belongeth unto God: as to trust in it, to delight in it, to put all our trust and confidence in it; when as we thinke it can performe that unto us, which God onely can. Now, that *Covetousnesse* is Idolatry, is meant, when as we thinke that riches can doe that which God onely can doe, as that they can doe us good or evill. *If they are Gods* (saith God) *let them doe good or evill.* God onely doth good and evill, therefore he is distinguished from Idols, because they cannot doe it: affections follow opinions, and practice followes affections, *Heb. 11. 6. He that will come to God, must beleeve in him.* None will worship God, unlesse they beleeve that God can comfort and relieve them in all their distresses; So when men have an opinion, that riches and wealch will yeeld them comfort, be a strong tower of defence to free them from inconveniences, this makes them to trust in them, and this thought is Idolatry.

Isay 41. 25

Heb. 11. 6.

There are two points of Doctrine which rise from these words.

Doct.

The first is this: That to seeke helpe and comfort from any creature, or from *Riches*, and not from God alone, is vaine and sinfull.

1

Gg 3

The



2

The second is this : That *Covetousnesse* which is Idolatry, is to be mortified.

For the first, for to seeke any helpe or comfort from any creature, and not from God alone, is vaine, and sinfull, and it must needs be so, because it is Idolatry. Now, in Idolatry, there are three things :

First, vanity and emptinesse, 1 Cor. 8. 4. *An Idoll is nothing in the world.* Here is vanity.

Secondly, sinfulness : there is no greater sinne than it is, and it is extreame vaine, because wee attribute that to it, which doth onely belong to God to thinke if that I am well, and strong in friends, have a well bottomed estate, *that my Mountain is strong on every side, I shall not be moved* ; This is sinfull and vaine ; you shall not live a whit the better, or happier for it ; A strange *Paradoxe*, contrary to the opinion and practice of most men. When we consult with our treasures, doe not we thinke, that if we have such wealth, and such friends, that we should live more comfortably and happily ? There is no man but will answer, that he thinkes so. But yet my brethren, we are deceived, it is not so ; it belongs to God onely to dispense of his *Prerogatives*, good or evil. *A horse is but a vaine thing* (saith the *Psalmist*) *to get a victory*, that is, though it be a thing as fit as can be in it selfe, yet if it be left to it selfe without God, it is but vaine, and can doe nothing. So I may say of riches, and other outward things ; Riches are vaine, and honours and friends are vaine to procure happinesse of themselves : So *Physicke* of it selfe is vaine to procure health without God, they are nothing worth, hee that thinkes otherwise, erreth. It was

was the folly of the *Rich man*, that he thought so, and therefore sung a *Requiem* unto his soule: *Eate and drinke, and be merry, O my soule, thou hast good laid up for thee for many yeares.* Hee did not thinke himselte happy, because he had any interest in God and his favour, but because he had abundance of outward things, and therefore you see the end of all his happineffe, *Thou foole, this night shall thy soule be taken from thee*, and then what is become of all thy happineffe? Yet such is our folly, that most of us reflect on the meanes, and on the creatures, and expect happineffe from them: but *Christ* tells us, they will not doe the deed; this night shall they take away thy soule, and then all thy happineffe is gone. The rich man thought before, he had beene sure as long as his wealth continued with him, that he needed not to expect any calamity, but now he sees that he built on a sandy foundation. *David*, though a holy man, being established in his Kingdome, having subdued all his enemies, and furnished himselfe with wealth, he thought that *his Mountaine was then made so strong, that it could not be removed*, that to morrow should be as yesterday, and much more abundant. But no sooner did GOD hide his face from him, but hee was troubled. To shew that it was not his riches and outward prosperity that made him happy, but God onely. So *Dan. 5. 28. Belshazzar*, when as he thought himselte happy, being invironed with his wives, Princes and servants, when as he prayesd the gods of silver, and the gods of gold, abounded with all outward prosperity, and reposed his happineffe in it,

is

Luk 12. 19

Psal. 30. 7

is accounted but a foole by *Daniel*, because he glorified not God, in whose hands his wealth and all his wayes were, and therefore he was destroyed. These things of themselves will not continue our lives, nor yet make us happy of themselves; we take not one step of prosperity, or adversitie, but Gods hand doth lead us. My brethren that heare me this day, that have heretofore thought, that if you had such an estate, such learning, such ornaments, and such friends, that then you were happy. To perswade you that it is not so, it would change your hopes and feares, your grieve and joy, and make you labour to be rich in Faith and good workes. It will be very hard to perswade you to this, yet we will doe what we can to perswade you, and adde certaine reasons, which may perswade you to beleieve it to be so; if God shall adde a blessing to them that joyne the operation of his Spirit with them to perswade you.

I  
Reason.

First, this must needs be so, in regard of Gods all-sufficiency, he alone is able to comfort without the Creatures helpe, else there were an insufficiency, and narrowness in him, and so then he should not bee God, if he could not fill our desires every way, even as the Sunne should be defective, if it needed the help of Torchcs to give light. God is blessed not onely in himselfe, but makes us all blessed: It is the ground of all the Commandements. *Thou shalt love and worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serve.* Wee must loue him with all our hearts, with all our soules; Let not the Creature have any jot of them, because all comfort is from God, *Gen. 17.1. I am God all sufficient,*

cient, walke before me and be perfect, that is, love me altogether, set your affection on none but me, yee neede not goe unto the Creature, all is in me. If the Creature could doe any thing to make us happy, and not God, then we might step out to it, but the creature can doe nothing to it, God onely is All-sufficient to make you perfect every way, though that the Creatures be used by God, yet it is only God that makes you happy, and gives you comfort, and not the Creature.

Secondly, it must needs be so, because of the vanity and emptinesse of the Creature, it can doe nothing but as it is commanded by God, hee is the Lord of Hosts which commandeth all the Creatures, as the Generall doth his Army. A man having the Creature to help him, it is by vertue of Gods Commandement; it is the vanity of the Creature, that it can doe nothing of it selfe, except there bee an influence from God: Looke not then unto the creature it selfe, but to the influence, action, and application which it hath from Gods secret concurrence with it, what it is to have this concurrence and influence from the creature, you may see it exprest in this *similitude*. Take the hand, it mooves, because there is an imperceptible from the will that stirs it to the Creature moving, and giving influence and comfort to us, it is Gods will it should doe so, and so it is applied to this, or that action. The Artificer using a hatchet to make a stoole, or the like, there is an influence from his Art, that guides his hand and it; So the creatures working, is by a secret concurrence from God, doing thus and thus. And to know that it is from God, you find a mutability from the

Reas. 2.

H h

Creature,

Creature it works not alwayes one way : *Physicke* and all other things are inconstant ; sometimes it helps, sometimes not, yea, many times when you have all the meanes, then they faile, to shew that there is an influence from God, and that the creatures are vanishing, perishing, and inconstant :

*Reas. 3.*

Thirdly, it must be so, because it is sinfull to looke for comfort from any thing but from God, because by this we attribute that to the creature, which onely belongs to God, which is Idolatry. The creature steales away the heart in an imperceptible manner. As *Abalom* stole away the peoples heart from *David*, or as the adulterer steal's away the love of the wife from her husband : it makes you serve the creature, it makes you fettle your affection upon the creatures : if they faile, you sorrow ; if they come, ye joy, and ye do this with all joy, all delight, all pleasure and desire, this is a great sin, nay, it is the greatest sin ; As adultery is the greatest sin, because it severs and dissolves the marriage : so it is the greatest, because it severs us from God, and makes us cleave to the creature.

The maine confectory and use from this, is to keepe you from lusting after worldly things : Men are never weary of seeking them, but spend their whole time in getting of them, and this is the reason why the things that belong to salvation, are so much neglected, men spend so much time in a thousand other things and trifles, and have no time at all to serve God in ; they are busie about riches, honour, credite, or the things whereon their fancies doe pitch, but if this be digested, it will teach you to seeke all from God who disposeth

disposeth all things, and to whom the issues of life and death, of good or bad belong.

Consider with your selves, and you shall finde that the reason wherefore you doe seeke for outward content or comfort is, because you doe thinke it will doe you good if you have it, or hurt if you have it not, but herein you are giving that to the creature, which only belongs to God, *Esay 1. 23. If the idols be gods, let them doe good or evill,* saith the Lord. The scope of this place, is to cast off the whorish and adulterish affection of those that have an eager and unwearied desire after earthly things, by shewing that they cannot doe us any good or hurt. Therefore God punished *David* exceedingly for numbering of the people, because that hee thought they could strengthen him against his enemies without Gods helpe, therefore, *Ier. 23. 14.* Thus saith the Lord, *Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, neither let the mighty man glory in his might, nor the rich man glory in his riches. But let him that glorieth, glory in this, that he understandeth and knoweth, that I am the Lord, that executed loving kindnesse, judgement and righteousness in earth.* As if hee should have said, if these things could doe you good or hurt, there were some reason that you might seekethem, but there is nothing in them that you should desirethem, for it is I onely that execute Iudgement and Mercy, all good and evill is from me, therefore *Psalme 62.* wee have this caveat given us: *If riches increase, set not your hearts upon them, magnifie not your selves for them and in them,* for all comfort is from God onely, else you might set your hearts on them,

Hh 2

but

but now all power and kindnesse is from him, therefore your wealth cannot doe it.

*Object.*

But it may be objected, that God doth comfort us, and make us happy in this life by meanes, and that riches are the meanes, wherefore then may wee not seeke to them to get this comfort ?

*Answer.*

To this I answer, that God doth reward every man according to his works, not according to his wealth, yea, hee can comfort us without these, for hee is the God of all consolation, *2 Cor. 1. 3.* and that hath inclusive and exclusively all comfort in him and from him, none without him ; If we thinke to have it from honour, wealth, or friends, we deceive ourselves, for they are vaine and profit not, *1 Sam. 12. 25.* *Turne yee not aside, for then should you goe after vaine things, which cannot profit you, nor deliver you, for they are vaine.* All these things without God will profit you nothing.

*Object.*

*Answer.*

But will not wealth and friends profit us ?

No, not at all, they are vanity, they are empty in themselves, they cannot doe it, they are in themselves but vanity ; having the Creature you have but the huske without the graine, the shell without the kernell, the creature is but empty of it selfe, except God put into it a fitnessse to comfort you, all is vanity and nothing worth, and this vanity is nothing but emptinesse. And this serves to correct the thoughts of men, who thinke that if they had such an estate, and all their debts paid ; If they had such and such friends, that then all would be well with them, and who is it that thinkes not thus ? But let those that entertaine such thoughts, consider the vanity of the Creature ;

All



All our finnes proceed from the over-valewing of the creature, for sinne is nothing but an aversion of the soule from the immutable God to the Creature. Labour then to conceive of the creature aright, that it is vaine; this will keepe you aright, and hinder you from going from God and cleaving to the Creature.

To presse this further, consider these 4. things:

First, if you goe another way to worke, all you see and seeke comfort in the creature shall be labour lost, for it is not in the power of the Creature to yeelde you any comfort; If you busie your selves with seeking of comfort from it, you will walke in a vaine shadow, *Psal. 39. 6. Surely every man walketh in a vaine shadow, Surely they are disquieted in vaine. He heapeth up riches, and knoweth not who shall gather them.* If we looke for comfort from riches, we looke it but from a shadow, all our labour is in vaine.

There is a shadow of the Almighty wherein some men walke, where they shall bee sure to finde this comfort, others there are that walke in the shadow of the Creatures, in the vanity of their mindes, seeking comfort from it: Those who thus walke, shall be deceived. A shadow though it seeme to be something, yet it is nothing, it may seeme to have the lineaments of a man, or some other creature, yet it is nothing: So these outward things may seeme to have something in them, but yet indeede they have nothing, those that seeke for comfort in them, commit two evils, *Ier. 2. 14. They forsake God the Fountaine of living water, and digge unto themselves pits that will hold no water; God having all comforts in him, comforts never failing,*

H h 3

because

because there is a Spring of comfort in him, yet wee forsake him, and digge pits, which if they have any water, it is but borrowed, and not continuing, and that water which they have is none of the best, it is muddy, and will not alwayes continue: Wherefore pitch your affections upon the true substantiall good, not on vanities. If wee see a man come to an Orchard full of goodly fruite, and hee should onely catch at the shadow of them, netling his hands, and spending his labour in vaine, we would account him either a foole, or a mad man; yet we in the cleare Sun-shine of the Gospell (such is our madnesse) catch and seeke after shadowes, with trouble of minde, and sorrow of heart, neglecting the substance.

3

Secondly, consider that you seeke your happinesse the wrong way, that is, you seeke it in worldly things, they are not able to helpe you, because they reach not to the inward man, the body is but the sheath and case, our happinesse lies not in it; So in the creatures, their happinesse consists not in themselves, but in something else, It lies in observing the rule which God hath appointed for them. The fire observing the rule which God hath given it, is sure; so of water, and so of all creatures animate and inanimate, the happinesse consisteth in observing the rules which God hath prescribed unto them. The Law of God is a rule that wee must walke by, following it as a rule wee are happy, that doing well, and observing the Commandements make us happy: *Hee that keepeth the Commandements shall live in them*: He that departeth from them is dead. Every motion of the fish  
out

out of the water is towards death, but every motion of it in the water is to life : So let mans motions bee towards God, and then they are motions to life; but let him move after outward things, and it is a motion towards death and misery, and therefore if you seeke this comfort from outward things, you goe the wrong way to get it.

Thirdly, consider that you make a wrong choice, you seeke not that which will doe it; if you seeke for this comfort in God, all is in one place; but if you seeke for it in the creatures, you must have a multitude of them to comfort you; If that they could comfort you, you must have health, wealth, honor, friends, and many other things, but there is one thing onely will doe it, if you goe the right way to get it, you shall finde it onely in God; *Martha*, she was troubled about many things, when as one thing onely was necessary. If you looke for comfort in earthly things, you must have a thousand things to help to it, *But godlinesse which hath the promises of this life, and of the life to come,* doth yeeld this comfort of it selfe, if you seeke it in it.

3

It is a great advantage for us to have all the comforts in one thing: Godlinesse onely hath all these comforts, therefore seeke them in it.

Fourthly, consider, that that comfort and happinesse which you have from the creature, is but a dependant felicity, and it is so much the worse, because it depends on the creature, which is mutable and uncertain; how much better is it to deped on God, in whom is no shadow of variety or change. Every creature

4

is

is weaker, by how much it hath dependance on another, and so are you weaker, by how much the more you depend on outward things ; If you depend on friends, they may change their affections, and become your enemies, or death may take them away, and then your happinesse is gone: If you depend on Riches, *Prov. 23. 5. Wilt thou set thy eyes on that which is not ? for riches certainly make themselves wings, and flie away as an Eagle towards heaven,* and then your happinesse is gone: but if you seeke for, and place your happinesse in God, in whom is no change or alteration, then it is perpetual. A dependancy on things that are mutable, will yeeld no comfort, because God will have all to depend on himselfe. Therefore, the *1 Cor. 1. 30. Christ of God is made unto us wisdom and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption, that no flesh might rejoyce in it selfe, but that he that glorieth might glory in the Lord:* for this end, God hath conveyed Christ unto us, that he might make us beleve that we fare not the better for any Creature, and that so we might rejoyce onely in the Lord ; Therefore hee that made Christ Redemption from all evill, that he might furnish us with all good, Christ hath redeemed us from hell and misery, and from want of good things, seeke not then a dependance on the Creature, thinke not that it will better you, and this will make you to depend on Christ ; Therefore for these regards, correct your opinion of worldly and outward things, and judge of them with righteous judgement, depend onely on God, if you will have him to be your Portion as hee was the Levites, refuse him not as the Israelites did, depend

depend upon him in good earnest; A little, you say with Gods blessing will doe much; Labour not therefore, neither toile you to leave great portions to your children, the common pretence that men have for their Covetousnesse, for though you leave them never so much, if Gods blessing be not on it, it is nothing, it can yeeld them no comfort, yea, many times it is an occasion of their hurt. If then Gods blessing be all in all, if that onely can administer comfort, and make us happy, I would aske you this Question: What if you did leave your children onely Gods blessing, would it not bee sufficient though you left them little or nothing else, you thinke not so, and yet whatsoever you can leave them without Gods blessing, is nothing worth; Preachers labour much in this, to draw you from worldly things, and all to little purpose; it must be Gods Teaching, that perswades within which must effect it; you must therefore take paines with your hearts, the generality of the disease shewes that it is hard to be cured, labour therefore to finde out the deceits which hinder the practice of these things, which are these:

One Deceit that deceives them, is, that they are ready to say, that those things are the blessings of God. Why should we not rejoyce in them: so afflictions, they are crosses, and therefore grieve for them; If these then did not abide to our blessednesse, why count we them blessings, and account poverty as a crosser?

To this I answer, that if you take them as blessings, you may rejoyce in them as the instruments by which God doth you good; blessings are relative words,

Deceit 1

Quest.

Answ.

they have reference unto God, if you consider them without reference unto him, they cease to be blessings; therefore if you consider them meerely as blessings, you may rejoyce in them. Now yee receive them as blessings.

I

First, if you depend upon God for the disposing, continuing, and want of them, if you thinke you shall enjoy them no longer than God will; If you thinke thus with your selves, wee have wives, children, friends, and riches, tis true, we have them, but yet they shall not continue with us an hour or minute longer than God will: If you thinke so in good earnest, then yee rejoyce in them as blessings. A man that is relieved when he is in danger, lookes more to the will, than to the hand of him that helps him: Wee looke more to the good will of our friends, than to their gifts: So wee should looke more unto Gods will and pleasure, than to the benefits he bestowes upon us; The consideration of these things as blessings, must raise up your thoughts to heavenly things, to consider, that whatsoever is done on earth, is first acted in Heaven: The Sunne is first eclipsed there, and then here: So that your estates are first eclipsed there, before that they are here; looke therefore on God, and on these, as meerly depending on Gods will, and then you enjoy them onely as blessings.

2

Secondly, you looke on them as blessings, if you looke upon them, so as to know that you may have them in abundance without any comfort; Instruments have nothing of themselves, whatsoever they have is put into them.

A

A man may have friends, and all other outward things, his mountaine may seeme to be strong, yet without Gods blessing on them, hee may want comfort in them; When as you thinke this, that you may have those things without comfort, it is a signe that your eye is on God, that you looke on them onely as the *Vehiculars*, or conduct-pipes to convey comfort. The aire yeelds light as an Instrument, though it have no light of it's owne, the water may heate, but not of it selfe, but by the heat which is infused into it by the fire; so if a man drinke a potion in Beere, the Beere of it selfe doth not worke, but the potion worketh by the Beere: So it is with all outward blessings, they of themselves can yeeld you no comfort at all, but if they would yeeld you any, it is by reason of that comfort which God puts into them.

Thirdly, you doe then enjoy them as blessings, if you thinke you may have comfort without them; The ebbing and flowing of outward things, doth not augment your comfort, or diminish it. Those that have not any outward blessings, may have more gladnesse and comforts in their hearts, than those whose corne and wine are increased, *Psalm. 4. 7.* Those who have but a small Cottage, and a bed in it, are many times more happy, more healthy, and sleepe more quietly then these rich men, whose wealth will not suffer them to sleepe, *Eccles. 5. 12.* Many there are that seeme to want all outward blessings and comforts, yet are full of inward comforts and delights. Many there are, who like *Paul* and the Apostles, seeme to have nothing, and yet possesse all things. As it is



all one with God, to helpe with few or with many, so he can comfort with few friends and externall blessings, as well as with many; yea, hee can make a little which the righteous have, more comfortable than all the renewes of the ungodly, be they never so great.

That which hath beene said of blessings, the like al so may be said of crosses, you may grieve for them if you take them as crosses, but withall take heed that yee account not those things crosses, which indeede are no crosses: want was no crosse to *Paul*, nor yet imprisonment, for in the one he abounded, in the other he sung; it is advantage unto us sometimes to have outward blessings taken from us. It is advantage for us to have blood taken away in a pleuresie; It is good sometimes to lop trees, that so they may bring forth more fruit; so it is good for us many times to have crosses for to humble us, and to bring us neere unto God, yet we may sorrow for the losse of those things, and take it as a crosse. If you can lay this from your hearts, that yee are not afflicted, because yee are made poore, because your wealth is taken from you, but because it is Gods pleasure to take it away from you, either for the abuse of it, or else to punish you for some other sinne. So that if you be cast into some sicknesse, you may not grieve for it as a crosse meerly, as it is a *sicknesse*, but as you conceive the hand of God in it, laying it on you as a punishment for your *Sinne*.

2  
*Deceit.*

The second Let, and Deceit is, the present sense and feeling which we have of the comfort that comes from abundance of outward things, therefore whatsoever

soever is said to the contrary, is but speculations and phantasies: men are guided by sense which cannot be deceived; wee finde and feele comfort in those things by experience, wee see a reality in these things, and therefore whatsoever you say to the contrary, is but in vaine, and to no purpose.

To this I answer, that you must not judge of things according to *sense*, for *sense* was never made a Judge of God to judge of these things, but judge of them according to faith and rectified reason, which judgeth of all things that are to come, that are past, and present altogether, and so can best judge of these things as they are.

Ans<sup>w</sup>.

Now, for to helpe your judgement in these things.

First, consider what the *Scripture* doth say of them, what it doth say of pleasures, friends, and riches, the *Scripture* presents things as they are, and that tells you that they are but vanity of vanities, all is but vanity.

Secondly, consider the judgements of others concerning them who have beene on the stage of afflictions, and have abounded in good workes whilest they lived, but are now gone.

Thirdly, consider what you will judge of them at the day of death, then men are awaked, and see these things as they are indeede, and then they bemoane themselves, that they have spent so much time in seeking after those things that will not profit them, and spent so little time in looking after salvation.

Judge not of them as you finde them for the present, but likewise as you shall finde them for the time to come, judge of altogether.

Now, for *Sense*, you must understand, it is double.

1 First, there is a *sense* and feeling of the comfort of the Creature, as a man that is benumbed with cold, is refreshed with fire, or a man that is faint and feeble in heart, is refreshed with Wine.

2 Secondly, there is a super-eminent comfort, proceeding from an apprehension of Gods favour towards us, in giving these blessings to us.

There may be an inward distemper, which may make our joyes to be hollow and counterfeit. There may be sadnesse of heart, where there is outward joy, because there is an inward and *Super-eminent Sense*, which affects the heart another way, and therefore *Eccles. 2. 2.* It is called made *Joy*, because we minde it not. It is the *Joy of Joyes*, and life of comfort, that is from within, that proceeds from the inward man; As the soule is strong in health, so it findes more comfort both in externall and Super-eminent comfort. Graces are to the soule, as health is to the body, the more and the greater they are, the more comfort they minister.

*Object.* But yee may say, that the Creature can administer its owne comfort, and of it selfe.

*Answ.* To this I answer, that there is an aptnesse and fitnesse in the Creature to comfort us, but yet it can yeeld no comfort without God; wherefore keepe your affections in square, have so much joy and delight in the Creature, as the Creature requires, and no more; If your affections hold a right proportion with their objects, they are aright, therefore thus farre you may joy in the Creature, and no further.

First,

First, you may joy in it with a remisse joy, yee may also sorrow with a remisse sorrow, yee may joy in it as if yee joyed not, and sorrow in it, as if you sorrowed not.

1

Secondly, you may joy in them with a loose joy, and affect on, as they sit loose to you, so you may sit loose to them, 1 Cor. 7. 29, 30, 31. *Brethren, the time is short, it remaineth therefore, that those which have wives be as if they had none, that those that weepe, bee as if they wept not, that those that rejoyce, as if they rejoyced not, and those that buy, as though they possessed not, and those that use this world, as not abusing it, that is, Let your affections bee loose to these things. Take any of these outward things, you may cast your affection on them in a loose manner, goe no further than this, the fashion of the world passeth away, yee may be taken away from it, and it from you, therefore affect it no otherwise than a transitory thing; and with a loose and transeunt affection, willing to depart from it, whensoever it shall please God to take it from you.*

2

Thirdly, you may love them with a dependant affection, they are things of a dependant nature, they have no bottome of their own to stand upon, they only depend on God, and so you may love them as depending on him, cying the Fountaine, and not the Cisterne from whence they flow, take not light from the Aire, but looke to the Sunne from whence it comes.

3

The third Decett is a false reasoning. *Wee finde it otherwise by experience; We see that a diligent hand maketh rich, and bringeth comfort, wee see that labour bringeth learning, and for the labour which wee take to get it,*

3  
Decett.

it, in recompence of it, it makes us happy.

*Ansiv.* To this I answer, that this claime doth not alwayes hold, God breakes it many times : Riches come not alwayes by labour, nor comfort by Riches, the labour profiteth nothing *Psal. 12. 71.* *Except the Lord build the house, they labour in vaine that build it: except the Lord keepe the City, the watchman watcheth but in vaine.* It is in vaine to rise up early, to goe to bed late, and to eate the bread of carefulnesse, yee shall not reape the fruit ye expect, unlesse God be with your labour. If Christ be absent, the Disciples may labour all night and catch nothing, but if hee bee present with them, then their labour prospereth, then they inclose a multitude of Fishes : So when we labour and take paines, and thinke to bee strong in our owne strength, without Gods helpe, wee goe to worke with a wrong key, which will not open, but if Gods hand be in the businesse, we doe it with great facility and ease, which God hath appointed wee should doe. You may see this in *Ioseph*, God purposed to make him a great man ; see with what facility he was made the Governor of *Egypt*, next to *Pharaoh*, without his owne seeking, and beyond his expectation : So it was with *Mordecai*, so with *David* ; God appointed to make them great, and therefore they became great, notwithstanding all oppositions. On the contrary, let man goe on in his owne strength, and he shall labour without any profit at all : hence it is, that many times wee see a concurrence of all causes, so that wee would thinke that the effect must needs follow, and yet it followes not; and if it doe follow, yet we have no comfort in it.

First,

First, because God makes an insutableness and disproportion betwixt the man and the blessing, as betweene *Judas* and his Apostleship: A man may have tables well furnished, riches in abundance, a wife fit for him, and yet have no comfort in them, because God puts a secret disproportion betwixt him and them.

I

Secondly, though there be a concurrence of things, yet God may hinder the effect, sometimes for good, and sometimes for evill, as *Elisha's* servant was ready in the nicke, when the *Shunamite* came to beg her possessions and lands of the King, 2 *King*. 8. 5, 6. Hee was then telling the King how *Elisha* had restored her sonne to life: So *Abraham* when he was to offer up his sonne *Isaac*, in the instant God sent the Ramme to be tyed in the bush: So *Saul* when he had purposed to kill *David*, God called him away to fight with the *Philistims*, and as God hinders the effect for good, so he doth for evill:

2

Gen. 22. 13

Thirdly, God doth it sometimes, by denying successe unto the causes. The battle is not alwaies to the strong. When there are causes, and the effect follows not, it is because God doth dispose of things at his pleasure, and can turne them a contrary way; health and comfort, joy and delight follow not outward blessings, except God put it into them.

3

The fourth deceit is this: These things are certaine and present, but other things are doubtfull and uncertaine, wee know not whether wee shall have them or no.

4  
Deceit.  
Object.

To this I answer, it is not so, future, spirituall and

Answ.

K k

eternall

eternall things are not incertaine, but these things which we enjoy here are; those things we here enjoy, and wee also our selves, are subject to changes and alterations. Wee are as men on the Sea, having stormes as well as calmes: Wealth and all outward blessings are but transitory things, but faith and spirituall things are certaine, and endure for ever. Wee have an Almighty and unchangeable God, and immortall, incorruptible inheritance, which fadeth not away, reserved for us in the highest Heavens. In temporall things, who knoweth what shall bee to morrow? In them thou canst not boast of to morrow, but as for spirituall things, they are certaine, they have no ambiguitie in them; But the maine answer that I give, is, that here wee must use our faith. Consider the grounds on which faith relies, and then the conclusion and consequences that arise from them; take heede to them, and be not deceived; If yee beleve God to be the rewarder of all those that trust in him, as you say hee is, why rest you not on him, why are not yee contented with him for your portions, why thinke you not him sufficient? If the Creature be God, then follow it, but if God bee God, then follow him, and be satisfied with him; Labour therefore for faith unfeigned, and walke according to it.

If then it bee vaine and *sinfull* to seeke helpe and comfort from any creature, or from riches, and to thinke that they can make us live more comfortably; Hence then consider the *sinfulness* of it, and put it into the Catalogue of your other *Sinnes*, that formerly

you



you have had such thoughts. Every one is guiltie of this *sinne*, more or lesse: and this is a *sinne* not small, but of an high nature, it is Idolatrie.

In the time of ignorance, *Satan* drew many men to grosse Idolatrie, to worship stocks and stones, but now he drawes them to another Idolatrie, lesse perceptible, and yet as dangerous in Gods sight as the other, who is a Spirit, and can discern and pry into it; Let us therefore examine our hearts, and consider how much wee have trusted the Creatures; Let us condemne our selves, and rectifie our judgements to judge of things as they are; Let us not thinke our selves happy for them; Let us not thinke our selves blessed in them, but onely in Christ, because it is not in their power to make us happy.

If wee have so joyed in these, or loved them so, as to love God lesse, it is an adulterous love and joy. Wee have no better rule to judge of adulterous love, than this, when as our love to the Creature, doth lessen our love to God.

Now, lest we be deceived in our love to the Creature, I will give you these *Signes*, to know whether your love be right to it or no.

First, if your affection to the Creature cause you to withdraw your hearts from God, *Ier. 17. 5. Cursed be the man which maketh flesh his arme, and whose heart departeth from the Lord.* It is a signe wee make flesh our arme, when wee withdraw our hearts from God, wee make the creatures our ayme, when they withdraw us from God, *1 Tim. 5. 5. Shee that is a widow indeed, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications night and day,*

K k 2

day,

I

day, this is a *Signe* that they trust in God, because they pray unto him. Consider what your conversation is, whether it be in heaven or no, *Phil. 3 20. Our conversation is in Heaven.* The neglecting and not minding earthly things, in the former Verse, sheweth him not to be of an earthly conversation, the more our hearts are drawne from God, the more are they set and fixed on earthly things.

2  
*Signe.*

Secondly, consider what earthly choice you make, when as these things come in competition with God, and Spirituall things, what bills of exchange doe you make, doe you make you friends of the unrighteous *Mammon*, not caring for the things of this world, when they come in competition with a good conscience, or doe you forsake God, and sticke to them?

3  
*Signe.*

Thirdly, consider what your obedience is to God, whether his feare be alwaies before your eyes, or whether Riches set you on worke or no: what mans obedience is, such is his trust; if yee obey God, then yee trust in him, and if ye obey Riches, then ye trust in them, and not in God.

4  
*Signe.*

Fourthly, consider what your affections are: nothing troubles a holie man, but *sinne*, the which makes him seeke helpe at Gods hands, and not in these. On the contrarie, nothing troubles a worldlie man, but losses and crosses, *Sinne* troubles him not at all; by this judge of your love to Riches, whether it bee right or no.

Thus much for the first generall Doctrin.  
We come now to the second, which is this.

*Th*

*That Covetousnesse is to be mortified.* That Covetousnesse is unlawfull, all know it, the things therefore that will bee usefull in the handling of this point, will bee to shew you what Covetousnesse is, and why it is to bee Mortified. Doct. 2.

Now to shew you what it is.

Covetousnesse may bee defined to bee a sinnefull desire of getting, or keeping money, or wealth inordinatelie.

First, it is a sinnefull desire, because it is a lust, as lusting after pleasure, is called Voluptuousnesse: It is also inordinate, the principle being amisse, and likewise the object. The principle is amisse, when wee over-value riches, set a greater beautie on them than they have, and seeing them with a wrong eye, wee lust after them, by reason that wee over-value them, and thus to over-value them, is to lust after them, and to thinke that they can make us happy, is Idolatrie. The object of it is as bad as the principle, when as the end is either to raise us to a higher condition, or to fare deliciousslie every day, or else to spend them in some lust, as well as to keepe them. I

Secondly, it is of keeping or getting money, getting it inordinatelie, seeking it by wrong meanes, or of keeping it. First, in not bestowing of it on our selves as we ought, there is *Tenacitie* of this sort amongst men, *Eccles. 5. 15.* *There is a fore evill under the Sunne, namely, Riches kept by the owners thereof to their hurt, when as it is comely for a man to eat and drinke, and to enjoy the good of all his labours that hee hath taken under the Sunne, all the daies of his life which God giveth him, for* 2

this is his portion, and thus to rejoyce in his labor, is the gift of God, *Eccles. 5. 18, 19.*

Secondly, thou in not giving to others, art too strait handed, having goods, and seeing others to want.

3 The last and chiefe thing in the definition is, inordinate, that is, which is besides the rule. A thing is said to bee inordinate, when as it is besides the square that a man doth, and in doing thus, we doe amisse.

Now, this affection is said to be inordinate in these foure respects.

1 First, when wee seeke it by measure more than wee should.

2 Secondly, when wee seeke it by meanes that wee should not.

3 Thirdly, when we seeke it for wrong ends.

4 Fourthly, when we seeke it in a wrong manner.

1 For the first, wee offend in the measure, when as wee seeke for more than God gives us; that which God gives every man, that is his portion here, *Eccles. 5. 18.* and he that desireth, and with-holdeth more than his portion, is he that offends in the measure, *Pro. 11. 14.*

*Object.* But how shall I know Gods Will, and what my portion is?

*Answer.* I answer, by the event. See in what estate and condition God hath set you; See what estate hee hath given you, that is your portion, and with it you must bee content, God hath a Sovereignie over us, we are but his subjects, and must be contented with what he gives us, you are contented with that your fathers or your Prince gives you, therefore you must receive that which God bestowes on you with all humilitie, and

and thankfulness; If wee be soundly humbled, wee will confesse our selves worthy to bee destroyed, *Ezek. 36. 32.* wee will confesse with *Iacob, Gen. 32. 10.* That we are unworthy the least of Gods mercies, that the least portion is more than we deserve. The prodigall being humbled, was content with the least place in his fathers house, to be as one of his household servants, and so wee ought to bee content with that portion which God hath given us, be it never so small, because it is more than we deserve, and if wee desire and seeke for more, this desire is *Sinnefull*.

Secondly, as wee ought not to seeke wealth, more than is our due: So wee ought not to seeke it by unlawfull meanes, not by Vsurie, Gaming, Oppression, Fraud, Deceit, or any other unlawfull meanes. I adde this of Gaming, because it is unlawfull, though it bee little considered, for it is no meanes that God hath appointed, or sanctified to get money by, because it is neither a gift nor a bargaine; I dispute not now whether playing for trifles to put life into the game bee lawfull, but of gaming with an intent to get and gaine money or wealth: This I say is unlawfull means, and such as have gotten money by such meanes, are bound to make restitution.

Thirdly, when the end of our seeking after money is wrong, then our affection is *Sinnefull*, as if wee seeke it onely for it selfe, that we may be rich, or to bestow it on our lusts, and make it our ends, and not for necessities onely, and so much as shall serve our turnes: when we seeke thus, wee seeke it in excessse; Hee that desires money for a journey, desires no more than will

2

3

will serve to defraie his costs, and expences in his journey; So if a man desires money for any other end, he desires so much as will serve for that purpose, and no more; So in other things: He that is sicke, desires so much Physicke as will cure him, and no more. So wee ought to desire as much as will serve our necessities and no more. But if wee desire it for our ambition, pleasure, or any other ~~by~~ respect, this desire is *Sinnefull* and inordinate;

4 Lastly, it is inordinate, when wee seeke in a wrong manner, which consists in these five particulars.

1 First, when wee seeke it out of love unto it, and this manner of seeking is spirituall adultery, *James 4. 4. Yee adulterers and adulteresses, know yee not that the friendship of the world is enmitie with God,* and whosoever is a friend to the world, is an enemy to God; If wee bee in love with it for its owne beautie, it is *Sinnefull*, it is spirituall adulterie.

2 Secondly, when as wee seeke it to trust in it, when as weethinke wee shall bee the safer by it, and make it our strong Tower, *Yet he that trusteth in riches shall fall, Prov. 11. 28. And therefore if wee have foode and rayment, we ought therewith to be content, 1 Tim. 6. 8. and not to trust in uncertaine riches.*

3 Thirdly, when as wee bee high-minded, and thinke our selves to bee the better men for it, when as they make us looke bigger then we did before, as commonlie those that bee rich doe; Therefore *1 Tim. 6. 17. Paul bids Timothie charge those that are rich in this world, that they be not high-minded.*

4 Fourthly, when as we seek it to glory in it, as *David* he

hee would number the people to glory and trust in them; this is sinnefull, *for he that glorieth, must glorie in the Lord, and not in them,* 1 Cor. 1. 31.

When as wee seeke it with too much haste and eagernesse, when all our dayes are sorrowes, travell and grieve, that our hearts take no rest in the night, *Eccles. 2. 23.* When as wee seeke it not staying Gods leasure, such a desire is inordinate, importunate and sinfull, 1 Tim. 6. 9, 10. *Those that will be rich, that is, such as make too much haste to be rich, fall into temptation, and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtfull lusts which draw men into perdition and destruction, and pierce them through with many sorrowes.*

But now you will say, that riches are the blessing of God, and will demand of me whether wee may not desire riches as they are blessings.

*Object.*

I answer, that it is true that they are blessings, and reward of the feare of God, *Prov. 22. 4.* By humility, and the feare of the Lord, are riches and honour. Therefore it is said of David that hee died full of riches. *Abrahams servants reckoned them as blessings, Gen. 24. 35. The Lord hath blessed my Master greatly, and he is become great, and he hath given him flocks and heardees, silver and gold, men-servants and maid servants, Camels and Ases. Jacob counts them as blessings, Gen. 32. 10.* And Christ himselfe saith, that it is more blessed to lend than to borrow; to give than to receive: may wee not then desire them? To answer this, wee must know, that there is a twofold will and desire: First, a remisse will, which is rather an inclination than a will: Secondly, there is a peremptory will,

*Ans.*

LI

which



which is mature, ripe and peremptory; with this latter will we may not desire them, but with the former we may, *1 Tim. 6.8. If wee have food and rayment, let us be therewith content; If any man hath a desire to be rich, yet having food and rayment, Let him not so desire more riches, but that he may be content with it.*

I Now, there is a double content; The first is, as when a man is sicke (to expresse it by a similitude) he must bee content, yet hee may pray for health, and use meanes to get it with a full and perfect will, yet with a depending on Gods Will. So wee being in want, may desire riches and wealth with a full will, sitting in the meane time quietly under Gods hand, and referring and submitting our will to his Will.

2 Secondly, there is a content, wherein having sufficient for food and rayment, wee suffer not our wils to goe actually beyond the limits which God hath set us; Therefore God hath promised outward blessings as a reward of his *Service*, and propoundeth them as so many arguments and motives to stirre us up to feare him, and wee may desire them as his blessings, with such a desire as this: when as wee set bounds and limits to the Sea of our desires, which are in themselves turbulent, and so submit them wholly to Gods Will. Christ being to die, had a will to live, yet not a full and resolute will, but a will subordinate to Gods Will; *Father, if thou wilt, let this cup passe from mee, yet not my Will, but thy Will bee done.* This Will was but an inclination, and not a will: So wee may will riches with a remisse will and inclination, but not with a full perfect will, that is, wee may not goe  
about

about to get them with a full desire and resolution.

But how farre may a man desire wealth, where must he set limits to his desires, where must they bee restrained?

*Object.*

I answer, that hee may desire food and rayment, hee may desire that which is necessarie for nature, without which he cannot live and subsist: As a man may desire a ship to passe over the Sea from one Countrie to another, because hee cannot passe over without it; so a man may desire food and rayment in the Sea of his life, because without it we cannot finish that course which God hath prescribed unto us.

*Answer.*

Now, there is a three-fold necessity:

First, there is a necessitie of expedience, as if a man hath a journey to goe, Tis true, hee may goe on foote, yet hee may desire a horse to ride, because it will bee more expedient for him; so you may desire with a remisse desire, so much as is expedient for your vocation and calling.

1

Secondly, there is a necessitie in respect of your condition and place, as men in higher ranke and calling neede more than men of an inferiour degree, to maintaine their place and dignitie; so they may desire to have more than they, so as they desire no more than will be sufficient to maintaine them in that ranke and degree wherein they are placed.

2

Thirdly, there is a necessitie of refreshment, and you may desire as much as is needfull for your necessarie refreshment, as much as hospitalitie requires, so that you doe not goe beyond it. And in these three respects, you may desire God to give you as much

3

as shall be expedient for you, because it is no more than nature requires.

Now besides this desire of things necessary, there is a desire of superfluity and excessive; this desire proceeds not from nature, but from lust, because that we desire such wealth, and to raise our estates, that we may bestow it on our lusts. The end of this desire, is onely to satisfie our lusts and pleasure, that like the rich Glutton, *Luk. 16. We might be well clad, and fare deliciously every day.* Many mens lives are nothing but playing and eating, and eating and playing, and are led all-ways in this Circle.

To desire Wealth to this or any other superfluous end, is very finfull, and it must needs bee so for these Reasons;

I  
Reason

First, because mans life stands not in abundance of excessive. Therefore in *Luk. 12. 13, 14, 15.* When as a certaine man spake to Christ to speake to his brother to divide the inheritance with him, He said unto him, *Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you?* and then bad the Company beware of Covetousnesse, because that a mans life consisteth not in the abundance of the things that he possesseth: That is, though you have never so much wealth, yet you shall not live the longer for it. Your life consists not in it, no more doth your comfort, for they wil but please the sight of your eies, they will not make you more happy than you are; *Seeke not therefore superfluitie, for your life consists not in abundance.* Hee is but a foole that thinkes that these things will make him happy, that these will make him rich, all that are not rich in God, are poore, and if they  
thinke

thinke themselves happy and rich in these things they are but Fooles.

Secondly, the desire of *superfluitie* is sinfull, because it proceeds from an evill root, but this desire proceeds from an evill root and a bitter, that is, from lust. It comes not from Gods Spirit, which bids every man to bee content with food and raiment; nor yet from nature, which seekes not superfluities; therefore proceeding from lust, it must needs be sinfull.

Reas. 2.

Thirdly, what you may not pray for, that you may not desire nor seeke after; But wee may not pray for *superfluities*, *Pro. 30.8. Give me neither povertie nor riches: feed me with food convenient for mee, not with superfluities, &c.* And in the Lords Prayer we are taught not to pray for superfluities, *Give us this day our daily bread*; that is, as much as is necessary for us and no more, therefore we may not desire it. The seeking of more than is necessary, doth hinder us; as a shooe that is too bigge, is as unfit to travaile as well as one that is too little.

3

Fourthly, it is dangerous, for it doth choake the Word, and drowne men in perdition; Therefore it is *Agars* prayer, *Prov. 30.8, 9. Give me neither poverty nor riches, feed me with food convenient for mee, lest I bee full and deny thee, and say, Who is the Lord?* Fulnesse and excesse is alwayes dangerous: Full Tables doe cause surfets, full cuppes make a strong braine giddy. The strongest Saints have beene shaken with prosperity and excesse; as *David*, *Ezekias*, *Salomon*, they sinned by reason of excesse in outward things; it is dangerous to be rich. Therefore it is *Dauids* counsell, *Psal. 62. 10.*

L 1 3

If

*If riches encrease, set not your hearts upon them: A rich man cannot enter into the Kingdome of Heaven; it is easier for a Cammell to goe through the eye of a needdle, then for him to enter into Heaven. For if a man bee rich, it is a thousand to one but that hee trusteth in his riches, and it is impossible that hee who trusteth in his riches, shall enter into Heaven.*

- 5 Lastly, to desire superfluitie must needs bee sinfull, because that wee have an expresse command to the contrarie; *1 Tim. 8. If wee have fooode and rayment, let us therewith be content;* this is the bounds which God hath set us, we must not goe beyond it.

If that it were lawfull for any man to have and to desire abundance, then it were lawfull for Kings, yet God hath set limits to them: *Deut. 17. 17. Hee shall not multiplie horses, nor wives to himselfe, that his heart turne not away; neither shall he greatly multiply to himselfe silver and gold, that his heart be not lifted up above his brethren.* God hath set us downe limits and bounds, how farre we shall goe, therefore to passe beyond them is sinfull, but we passe beyond them when wee desire superfluities, therefore the desire of superfluitie is sinfull.

*Object.*

But may not a man use his Calling, to encrease his wealth?

*Ans.*

I answer, that the end of mens Callings, are not to gather riches; if men make this their end, it is a wrong end; but the end of our Calling is to serve God and men, the ground hereof is this: Every man is a member of the Common wealth; every man hath some gifts or other, which may not lie idle; every man hath some Talents, and must use them to his Masters advantage,

advantage, and how can that be, except you doe good to men: Every one is a servant to Christ, and must doe Gods worke; no man is free, every one is Christs servant, and must be diligent to serve Christ, and to doe good to men. He that hath an office, must be diligent and attend it; every man must attend his calling, and be diligent in it.

If riches come in by your callings, that is the wages, not the end of our Callings; for that looks onely to God, we must not make gaine the end of our callings: There are many that make gaine their Godlinesse, and the end of their callings; Some preach onely for gaine, others use other callings onely for gaine; but if any man will make gaine the end of his calling, though hee may conceale and hide his end from men, yet let him bee sure that hee shall answer God the searcher of the heart for it. On the other side, if a man by diligence in his calling have riches following him, hee may takethem as a blessing of God bestowed on him, and as a reward for his calling. *The diligent hand maketh rich.* God will so reward it, not that wee must eye riches, and make them our end. God makes a man rich, and man makes himselfe rich. God makes us rich by being diligent in our callings, and using them to his Glory and mans good; he doth cast riches on us: man makes himselfe rich when hee makes riches the end of his calling, and doth not expect them as a reward that comes from God: I expresse it by *Iacob*; *Iacob* hee served *Laban* faithfully, and God blessed him, so that he did grow rich, he went not out of his compas and sphere, he tooke the wages that was  
given

given, and because that Gods end was to make him rich, God enriched him by his wages, as a reward of his service. The more diligent a man is in his calling, the more sincere and upright, the more doth God blesse him, and increase his riches: God makes men rich, when he gives them riches without sorrowes and troubles, when as they come in with ease, and without expectation and disquiet. Man makes himselfe rich, when as there is great trouble in getting, keeping, and enjoying them, when as hee useth his calling to get riches, or when as he useth unlawfull meanes. The method God useth to enrich men is this; He first bids them *Secke the kingdome of God, and the righteousness thereof, and then all these things shall be administred unto them* as wages: Wee must looke to our dutie, and let God alone to provide, and pay us our wages.

He that takes a servant, bids him onely looke to his dutie, and let him alone to provide him mear, drinke, and wages: we are servants, God is our Master, let us looke to our dutie, and leave the wages to him.

*Quest.*

But whether may not a man take care to get wealth, is not a man to care for his estate, to increase it, and to settle it?

*Answ.*

I answer, he may lawfully take care of it, observing the right Rules in doing it, which are these:

*Rule 1*

First, he must not goe out of his compasse, but walke within his owne pale, he must not step out of his owne calling into other mens, and in his owne calling he must not trouble himselfe with so much businesse, as that he cannot attend, or that may hinder him in his private service unto God: if he doe fill himselfe with

too



too much businesse in his owne calling, or step into others callings, this is sinfull and inordinate: If a man in his owne calling fill himselfe with so much businesse, that he cannot attend the things of salvation, that hee is so much tied with them, that hee hath no leisure, or spare time to search his owne heart, and to doe the particular duties necessary to salvation, hee then fayles in this, and sinnes in his Calling.

Secondly, his end must not bee amisse, hee must not ayme at riches; *Abraham* was poore, and so was *Jacob*, yet God made them rich and mightie, they were diligent in their callings, and God brought in wealth; God calls not a man to trust in himselfe, to make riches his ayme and end, to seeke excesse, superfluitie, and abundance, to live deliciously, to satisfie our lusts and pleasures, our ayme must be Gods glory, and the publike good, and then God will cast riches upon us as our wages.

Rule 2.

Thirdly, let it be a right care, and not an inordinate care, there is an inordinate care which checks the Word, you may know whether your care be such an immoderate care or no by these three signes:

Rule 3.

First, if you be troubled in the busines you go about, consisting either in desire, feare, or griefe, when as we either desire such a blessing exceedingly, or feare that we shall not have it, or grieve much for the losse of it.

Signe 1.

Secondly, when we feare we shall not bring our enterprise to passe, or attaine to that which we desire.

Signe 2.

Thirdly, when we are troubled at it if it be not accomplished, and grieve when wee foresee any thing that may prevent it; care being a right, sets head and

Signe 3.

M m

hand

hand on worke; but when the affections are just and right, there is no tumult or turbulency in them.

*Quest.*  
*Ansiv.*

When is a man covetous?

I answer, that then a man is a covetous man, when as he hath desires arising in him, which are contrary to the former rules, and he resists them not, or else resists them so weakely and feeblely, that hee gets no ground of them; he sees no reason why he should resist them, and therefore gives way unto them. A man is not a covetous man, nor an ambitious man, which hath covetous and ambitious thoughts, for these the holiest men have; but he that hath such thoughts, and strives not at all against them, or else strives but weakly, he is a covetous and ambitious man. A godly man may have these thoughts and desires, but hee strives strongly against them, gets ground of them, and gives them a death wound; but the covetous man he yeelds unto them; the godly man he gets the victory over them.

Now this covetousnesse is evill in it selfe; for first of all, it is Idolatry and spirituall Adultery, and then it is an evill and bitter root, having many stalkes on it; he that doth doe any thing to hold correspondency with it, he that doth belong unto it, to him it is the roote of all evill, *Luk. 16.* It keeps men from salvation, it choaks the good seeds sowne in mens hearts. Secondly, it must be mortified, for the vanitie of the object is not worth the seeking; therefore in *Luke 16. 9.* it is set downe in a comparison with the true treasure, and expressed in these foure circumstances:

*Circum.*

I

First, it is called the *Mammon of unrighteousnesse and wicked*

wicked riches; because it makes men wicked, opposed to spirituall blessings which are the best.

Secondly, it is least, because it doth least good, it preserves us not from evill, it doth the Soule no good.

Thirdly, it is but false Treasure, it hath but the shadow of the true; it shines as if it were true, but yet it is but false and counterfeit.

Lastly, it is not our owne, it is another mans; riches are the goods of others, not our owne; Luke 16. 12, and 10. 41, 42.

There are foure attributes given to riches: First, they are many things, and require much labour; *Martina* was troubled about many things.

Secondly, they are unnecessary; *One thing is necessary.* Thirdly, *They will be taken from us.* Fourthly they are not the best, and therefore our desire after them should be mortified.

From hence bee yee exhorted to mortifie this earthly member Covetousnesse, which is Idolatry; a sinne unto which all men are subject: Young men though they want experience of riches, are notwithstanding subject to this vice; but old men are most subject unto it, though they have least cause and reason for it. Professours of Religion are subject to it; many times it growes up with the Corne, and chokes it, therefore use effectuall meanes to root it out of your hearts.

First of all, pray to God not to incline your hearts to Covetousnesse; it is impossible for man, but easie for God to doe it.

Circum.

2

Circum.

3

Circum.

4

1

2

3

4

Vse.

Meanes.

1

Meanes

2

Secondly, be humbled for sinne; wee are so covetous and desirous for money, because wee were never humbled for sinne so much as we should be, and this is the reason why many would rather let *Christ* goe than their wealth and riches.

Meanes

3

Thirdly, use them to better purpose than heretofore yee have done, make friends with them, and find some better things to set your hearts upon. Except you have a better Treasure, you will not vilifie and depart with these: Labour therefore for true Godliness *with content, which is great gaines; 1 Tim. 6. 6.* which heales this malady, and takes away the false pretences of gathering, having, and affecting great riches.

---

FINIS.

---

434780